



KJV *vs.* Catholicism

Scripture Only, Without Commentary. May the Holy Ghost & Your Conscience Be Your Guide.

*This eBook may be shared freely. Do not sell.
If you desire a copy in print, please use the link below.*

© Copyright David Michael Curtis, All Rights Reserved
Arcadia Florida, United States of America, 34266

AVAILABLE ON KINDLE AND IN PRINT ON [AMAZON.COM](https://www.amazon.com)

*Download & share the **KJV vs.** series!*

KJV *vs.*



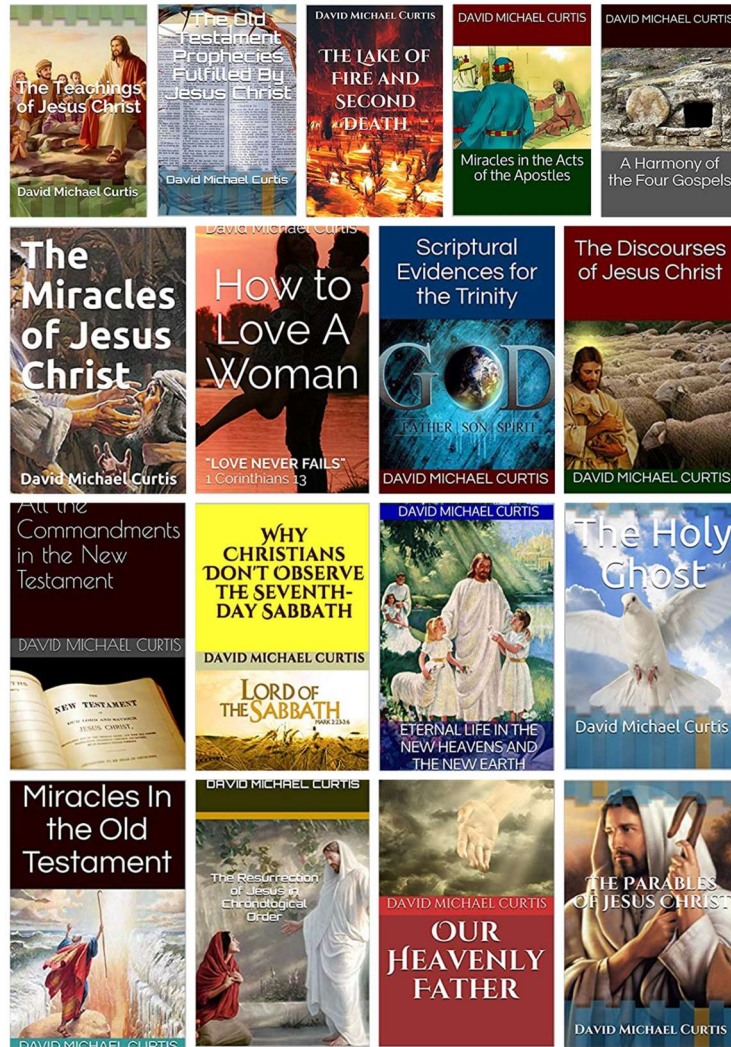
Located inside the eBooks folder:
/ **Topical Bible Studies (KJV)** / eBooks /

*Download the complete **KJV vs.** series!*

- ✓ KJV *vs.* Baptists
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Calvinism
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Catholicism
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Churches of Christ
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* Islam
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* JW
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Methodists
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Pentecostalism
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* SDA

amazon books

By David Michael Curtis
On Kindle & in Print



<https://www.amazon.com/stores/David-Michael-Curtis/author/B08DQ8739N>



Free eBooks

By David Michael Curtis

Mainstream Christianity	Roman Catholicism
Apostasy, Sins unto Death Baptism Saves Christ, Titles & Worship of Church, One Universal Death—Immortal Souls Election & Predestination Eternal Life Evangelism Faith, Once Delivered False Prophets Forgiveness God, the Father God, the Holy Ghost God, the Son God, the Trinity Good Works, Salvation Through Hell—Eternal Fire Idolatry Marriage & Family Michael, & His Angels Musical Instruments Original Sin The Gospel of Jesus Christ The Law of God The Lord's Supper The Prayer Book of Scripture Promises The Second Coming of Christ The Seven-Year Tribulation & more....	Baptism Saves Church, Catholic-One Universal Death—Immortal Souls Election & Predestination Eternal Life Evangelism Faith, Once Delivered False Prophets Forgiveness God, the Father God, the Holy Ghost God, the Son God, the Trinity Good Works, Salvation Through Hell—Eternal Fire Marriage & Family Mass, Transubstantiation Michael, & His Angels Mortal Sins Musical Instruments Original Sin Prayer Book The Gospel of Jesus Christ The Law of God The Pope The Second Coming of Christ Venerating Saints Venerating Statues & more....

About the Author, *David Michael Curtis (1974-Present)*



I am a sinner saved by God's grace. I have been baptized, and I confess that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. I trust in Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of my sins and the gift of eternal life.

I was born in Roseburg, Oregon. I became a Christian at age 19 in 1993. Over the next seven years, I wore out the bindings of eleven KJV Bibles. Using my own money, I conducted my first evangelistic crusade in 1999. I taught the Bible on the radio five days a week on K.O.R.E. Springfield, OR (2000-2002). I sold KJV Bibles and children's character-building books door to door in Washington, Oregon, California, Texas, Kansas, Georgia, Tennessee, and New York (1999-2007).

I was a volunteer chaplain for a maximum-security prison in Northern California (2005-2007). Since 2001, I have owned/managed 75+ Christian websites. From 2008 to 2010, I was the General Manager for Harvestime Books (an international Christian publishing house). I have also served the church as an elder, a new believer's class teacher, and a vacation Bible school teacher.

A Helpful Illustration Describing this Topical Bible Study eBook

The tallest trees in the world are the Redwoods in Northern California. The Redwoods share a single network of roots; this root system connects **all** the Redwoods trees. This means the Redwoods Forest is also the largest single-living organism in the world.

Imagine that each doctrine of the Bible is a giant Redwood tree supported by 30-40 roots (Bible verses). Examine the neighboring doctrines that share a root system (Bible verses) with that doctrine. Understand that under its surface, all the doctrines are connected by one massive root system within the Bible. My books *show how the various doctrines interconnect and share the same roots, supporting and depending on each other.*

My books use the Bible as its own interpreter, providing all the verses on whichever doctrine is being studied, topically arranged, without commentary. Christ is the only Teacher you need. He promised that you would know the truth, and the truth would set you free.



Table of Contents

About the Author,	5
Table of Contents	6
The Atonement: Jesus Christ's Death on the Cross	8
Angels	13
Anointing of the Sick	13
Baptism Saves	14
Celibacy	24
Church: Institutional Churches	27
Church, Forgives	74
Church, Salvation Through	76
Church: One Universal Catholic.	79
Confessing Sins to a Priest	83
Confess Your Faults One to Another	85
Confession to a Priest vs. Confessing to God.	88
Confirmation	97
Death—Immortal Souls	98
Eucharist: Preserves from Sin?	108
Eucharist: Helps the Dead?	110
Eucharist: This Is My Body—Part 1	112
Eucharist: This Is My Body—Part 2	120
Good Works, Salvation Through	129
Hell: The Lake of Fire & The Second Death	136
Holy Orders	148
Indulgences	161
Infant Baptism	162
Inquisition	169
Keys of the Kingdom—Part 1.	170
Keys of the Kingdom—Part 2.	182
Last Rites	194
Mary Saves?	197
Mary: Saved from Birth?	200
Mary: Perpetual Virgin?	202
Mary: Source of Holiness?	203
Mary: The Intercessor?	205
Mary: Recipient of Prayer?	207
Mary: Queen Over All Things?	209
Mary: Christ's Mother, The Virgin	211
Mass	214
Miracles	219
Mortal Sins	221

No Meat on Fridays	225
Original Sin	226
Penance	243
Penance vs. Repentance.	244
Praying For The Dead	247
Purgatory	249
Relics	252
Rock the Church Is Built on, Is Jesus Christ	253
Rosary Beads	264
The Keys of Peter	265
The Papacy	268
The Pope	275
The Sacraments Save	278
The Sin of Presumption	279
Tradition, Church Fathers & Church Councils	282
Transubstantiation	293
Treasury of Merit	296
Venerating Saints	300
Venerating Statues	304
He as God, Sits in the Temple of God	312
The Mark of the Beast	314

The Atonement: Jesus Christ's Death on the Cross

Jesus Christ learned obedience from the things he suffered.

Hebrews 5:8 Though he were a Son, yet **learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;**

By the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

Romans 5:17-19 For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life **by one, Jesus Christ.**) Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so **by the righteousness of one the free gift came** upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so **by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**

The Word of Faith.

Romans 10:8-13 But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, *even* in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, **the word of faith, which we preach;** That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

Received ye the Spirit By Faith, or by the Law?

Galatians 3:2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by **the hearing of faith?**

Galatians 3:5 He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or **by the hearing of faith?**

Christ Suffered "Once," Not Daily.

Hebrews 7:27. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for **this he did once**, when he offered up himself.

Hebrews 9:7. But **into the second *went* the high priest alone once every year**, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but **by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place**, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

Hebrews 9:25-26. Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

Hebrews 9:28. So **Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many;** and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.

Hebrews 10:10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

1 Peter 3:18. For **Christ also hath once suffered for sins**, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

This Do in Remembrance of Me.

Take Up His Cross Daily (In Memory), and Follow Me.

Luke 9:23. and he said to *them* all, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

Luke 22:14-20. and when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. and he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. and he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. and he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: **this do in remembrance of me**. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup *is* the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

1 Corinthians 15:1-4. Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; By which also ye are saved, **if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you**, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

1 Corinthians 11:23-26. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread: and when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, **Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me**. After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, **This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me**. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Christ's One-Time Death on the Cross Obtained Eternal Redemption For Us

Hebrews 9:12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, **but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.**

Believers are SANCTIFIED by the Cross ONCE—Forever.

Hebrews 10:10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Believers Are PERFECTED by the Cross ONCE—Forever.

Hebrews 10:14. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

Believers Are WASHED by the Cross.

Revelation 1:5. and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Believers Are JUSTIFIED by the Cross.

1 Corinthians 6:11. and such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Romans 5:9. Much more then, **being now justified by his blood,** we shall be saved from wrath through him.

Believers Are FORGIVEN of ALL Sin by the Cross.

Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

1 John 1:7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

Believers Have the ATONEMENT Right Now.

Romans 5:11. and not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

Believers Have PEACE With God.

Romans 5:1. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Believers Have Been RECONCILED With God by the Cross.

2 Corinthians 5:17-21. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. and all things are of **God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ**, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that **God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them;** and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Let's Recap:

- Jesus ONE Offering Upon the Cross in AD 33, was for the Sins of the WHOLE World.
- God's Wrath Has Been Eternally Satisfied by the Cross.
- Believers are SANCTIFIED.
- Believers are PERFECTED.
- Believers are WASHED.
- Believers are JUSTIFIED.
- Believers have the ATONEMENT right now.
- Believers have PEACE with God.
- Believers have Been RECONCILED with God by Jesus death on the Cross.

Jesus PURGED Our Sins, by Himself, & then He Sat Down. Hebrews 1:3.

The Cross, a Finished Work

Jesus Offering Upon the Cross was for the Sins of the WHOLE World.

God's Wrath Has Been ETERNALLY Satisfied by the Cross.

Believers are PERFECTED Forever.

Believers are WASHED.

Believers are SANCTIFIED Forever by the Cross.



Believers have Been RECONCILED with God by the Cross.

Believers are JUSTIFIED.

Believers have the ATONEMENT Now.

Believers have PEACE with God.

Jesus PURGED Our Sins by Himself, & then He Sat Down.

The blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleansed us from all sin.

Ephesians 1:7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

Revelation 1:5. and from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Jesus Redeemed us to God by His Blood.

Revelation 5:9. and they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for **thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Revelation 7:14. and I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. and he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, **and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

Angels

Created Angels are not to be Worshiped

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Don't Worship Angels—Worship God

Revelation 19:10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, **See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren** that have the testimony of Jesus: **worship God**: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Revelation 22:8-9 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, **See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets**, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: **worship God**.

Worship God and Christ.

Nehemiah 9:6. Thou, even thou, Art LORD alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee.

Philippians 2:9-11. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should Confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Hebrews 1:6. And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.

Anointing of the Sick

James 5:14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

Baptism Saves

As Administered By John.

Matthew 3:5-12. Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan, And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. **I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance:** but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: **he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost,** and *with* fire: Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

John 3:23. And John also was baptizing in AEnon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

Acts 13:24. When John had first preached before his coming **the baptism of repentance** to all the people of Israel.

Acts 19:4. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance**, saying unto the people, that **they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.**

Christ's Example.

Matthew 3:13-15. Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

Luke 3:21. Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

Adopted By Christ.

John 3:22. After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judaea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

John 4:1-2. When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

Jesus Christ Commanded To Be Baptized

Matthew 28:19-20. Go ye therefore, and **Teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:** and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Peter Commanded To Be Baptized

Acts 10:47-48 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? And **he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord.** Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

Acts 11:16 Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, **John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.**

Acts 16:15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide *there*. And she constrained us.

Acts 16:33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

Acts 18:8 And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of **the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.**

Paul Commanded To Be Baptized

Acts 19:3-5 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.**

In The Name Of The Father, The Son, And The Holy Ghost.

Matthew 28:19. Go ye therefore, and Teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:

Acts 1:5 **For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.**

Acts 11:15-18 And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, ***as on us at the beginning.*** Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, **John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.** Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as *he did* unto us, **who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ;** what was I, that I could withstand God? When

they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, **Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.**

In The Name Of Jesus Christ

Acts 19:5 When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

They That Gladly Received Peter's Words Were Baptized

Acts 2:41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added *unto them* about three thousand souls.

Immediately Upon Hearing & Believing The Gospel

Acts 16:31-34. And they said, **Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.** And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house. And **he took them the same hour of the night**, and washed *their* stripes; **and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.** And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, **believing in God with all his house.**

"Much Water," The Outward And Visible Sign In.

1 Corinthians 10:2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud **and in the sea;**

John 3:23. And John also was baptizing in AEnon near to Salim, **because there was much water there:** and they came, and were baptized.

Acts 8:36-39 And as they went on *their* way, **they came unto a certain water:** and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and **they went down both into the water**, both Philip and the eunuch; and **he baptized him.** And **when they were come up out of the water**, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

Acts 10:47. **Can any man forbid water**, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

Regeneration, The Inward And Spiritual Grace Of.

John 3:3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.

John 3:5-6. Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Titus 3:5-7. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy **he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost**; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

Faith Necessary To.

Acts 8:36-38. And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, **See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.** And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 18:8. And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.

Acts 19:4-5 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that **they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.** When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Confession Of Sin Necessary To.

Matthew 3:6. And were **baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.**

Repentance Necessary To.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Remission Of Sins, Signified By.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, **Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins**, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 22:16. And now why tarriest thou? arise, and **be baptized, and wash away thy sins**, calling on the name of the Lord.

Ephesians 5:26. That he might sanctify and cleanse it **with the washing of water** by the word,

There Is But One.

Ephesians 4:5. One Lord, one Faith, one baptism,

Rebaptism Necessary, When the Gospel is Not Understood, During The First Baptism

Acts 19:3-5 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Acts 22:16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

ADMINISTERED TO

Individuals.

Acts 8:38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 9:18. And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

Households.

Acts 16:15. And when she was baptized, and her household, she Besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be Faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

1 Corinthians 1:16. And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

John's Baptism Was Unto Repentance.

Matthew 3:11. I indeed Baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall Baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

Acts 19:3-5 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance**, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Baptism is for the Remission of Sins, and the Gift of the Holy Ghost

Acts 2:38-39 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ **for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.**

The Believer is Sealed Immediately after Baptism, by the Holy Ghost

Ephesians 1:13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also **after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,**

Ephesians 4:30 And grieve not **the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.**

Unites With Christ's Death, Burial & Resurrection

Romans 6:3-4. Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

Colossians 2:12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

Unites With Christ's Body, The Church

1 Corinthians 12:13. For **by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body**, whether we *be* Jews or Gentiles, whether we *be* bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

Is How Believers Put On Christ

Galatians 3:27-28. For **as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.** There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

Genesis 3:21 ¶ Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.

Job 29:14 I put on righteousness, and it clothed me: my judgment was as a robe and a diadem.

Isaiah 61:10 ¶ I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh *himself* with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth *herself* with her jewels.

A Man Which had not on a Wedding Garment

Matthew 22:11-14 And when the king came in to see the guests, **he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:** And he saith unto him, **Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment?** And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, **Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.** For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

Conducted In Different Houses, Doesn't Divide the Church into Separate Denominations

1 Corinthians 1:13-17. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or **were ye baptized in the name of Paul?** ¶ I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; **Lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.** And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. ¶ For **Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel:** not with wisdom of words, **lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.**

Galatians 3:27-28. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: **for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.**

Baptism Into Christ's Death Has Set Us Free From The Law

Romans 7:1-4. ¶ Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. So then if, while *her* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. **Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.**

Replaced Circumcision As The Seal Of The New Covenant

Colossians 2:11-13 In whom also **ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism,** wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. ¶ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, ***hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;***

One Baptism Vs. When Rebaptism Is Necessary

Ephesians 4:5 states that there is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, and yet **Acts 19** demonstrates that when a correct understanding of the gospel is not present, a rebaptism is necessary,

The Thief On The Cross

The thief on the cross demonstrates that faith in Jesus Christ is sufficient to save in extremely rare cases when baptism is impossible. However it is a misinterpretation when someone uses this isolated and very rare circumstance that prevented the thief from being baptized as an excuse to not be baptized, by somebody that is able to be baptized. Anyone that foolishly uses this example as a legal loophole or as a technicality, to downplay the importance of baptism and avoid being baptized, should be warned that there is no excuse for refusing to obey Christ's commandment to be baptized, when you are able to be baptized. If a miracle had set the thief on the cross free, you can be certain that he would have been baptized.

Baptism is Obedience to the Gospel Motivated by Love to Jesus Christ

Baptism Is Not "Salvation By Works."

Mark 16:16 **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believeth not shall be damned.

John 14:23-24 Jesus answered and said unto him, **If a man love me, he will keep my words:** and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

Matthew 7:24-25 **Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.**

All Who Refuse to Obey the Gospel Perish

Mark 16:16 **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but **he that believeth not shall be damned.**

John 14:24 **He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings:** and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

Matthew 7:26-27 **And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:** And the rain descended,

and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

2 Thessalonians 1:8 In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

1 Peter 4:17 For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

Baptism “Saves”

In like Figure as the Ark “Saved” From The Flood

1 Peter 3:20-21. Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, **eight souls were saved by water. The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us** (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good Conscience toward God,) by The Resurrection of Jesus Christ:

Mark 16:16. **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believeth not shall be damned.

The death of Jesus on the Cross saves from sin, Baptism is the sign that unites the repentant believer into Christ’s death. Romans 6:1-4. Upon Baptism the believer receives the Holy Ghost, by which he is sealed unto the day of redemption.

The thief on the cross demonstrates that when circumstances make Baptism utterly impossible, Christ will redeem and rejoice with that person in Paradise. However when Baptism is possible, and it is refused, there is no forgiveness of sins. Such refusal is deemed unbelief and denial of Christ.

Baptism Did Not Save the Unrepentant Simon Magus

Simon Magus Believed And Was Baptized

Acts 8:12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Then **Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized**, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

Simon Magus Had Not Received The Holy Ghost

Acts 8:16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)

Why Not? Simon Magus Had Not Repented,
*Faith, And Baptism In The Name Of The Lord Did Not Save Him. The Water Did Not Impart Any
Supernatural Powers Or Graces To Simon Magus, Without Repentance, Simon Magus Was Still In
The Gall Of Bitterness, And In The Bond Of Iniquity.*

Acts 8:14-25 ¶ Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, **that they might receive the Holy Ghost: (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)** Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. **Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.** Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me. And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

Acts 8:36 And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

Acts 8:38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 9:18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

Typified.

1 Corinthians 10:2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

Celibacy

It is not good that the man should be alone

“... the LORD God said, *It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.*” Genesis 2:18

Simon's wife's mother

Matthew 8:14 ¶ And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever.

Mark 1:30 But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her.

Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife

1 Corinthians 9:5 Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

Marriage is honorable

Hebrews 13:4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

He that is able to receive it, let him receive it

Matthew 19:12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. **He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.**

Revelation 14:1-5 ¶ And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty *and* four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred *and* forty *and* four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. **These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins.** These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, *being* the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

2 Corinthians 11:2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for **I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present *you* as a chaste virgin to Christ.**

But every man hath his proper gift of God

1 Corinthians 7:7 For I would that all men were even as I myself. **But every man hath his proper gift of God**, one after this manner, and another after that.

The unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord

1 Corinthians 7:32-34 But I would have you without carefulness. **He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:** But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please *his* wife. *There is difference also between a wife and a virgin.* **The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit:** but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please *her* husband.

Let no man beguile you of your reward

Colossians 2:18-23 **Let no man beguile you of your reward** in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, **why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.**

Seducing spirits, doctrines of devils; forbidding to marry

1 Timothy 4:1-5 ¶ Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; **Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats,** which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving: For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife

1 Timothy 3:1-13 ¶ This *is* a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work. **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;** (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. *Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.* ¶ **Likewise must the deacons be grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre;** Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless. **Even so must their wives be grave,** not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. **Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.** For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Titus 1:6-9 ¶ If any be blameless, **the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly. For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God**; not selfwilled, not soon angry, **not given to wine**, no striker, **not given to filthy lucre**; But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, **sober**, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

Church: Institutional Churches

The Apostles in the First Century Started House Churches

House Churches are the only churches in the New Testament. Starting in the second century, cathedrals were built on top of the first house churches long after the first generation of the Church and the apostles had died.

Christians around the world believe in Jesus Christ's divinity, the Trinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, and the authority of the scriptures as the Word of God. However, despite these shared beliefs, an immense number of Christians have separated into various denominations. The differences between these denominations can range from their worship styles to their interpretations of theological teachings.

Roman Catholic Church

In 607 AD, Pope Boniface III received a decree from the Byzantine Emperor Phocas declaring the Roman See (the Diocese of Rome) as the "head of all the Churches" and the Pope as the "Universal Bishop." This decree solidified the Pope's primacy over other bishops and marked a crucial step in the establishment of papal supremacy. Its headquarters are located in Vatican City. Today, around 18.7% of the U.S. population, totaling around 62 million people, identifies as Roman Catholics, illustrating the enduring influence of this denomination.

1260 years later, in 1867, the Papal States, which were territories in central Italy governed by the Pope, faced significant challenges due to the ongoing process of Italian unification. Forces aligned with the Italian nationalist movement sought to unify the various Italian states, including the Papal States, into a single nation-state.

During this time, conflicts and military actions involving the Papal States occurred. In 1860, some territories were annexed by the Kingdom of Sardinia. By 1870, with the capture of Rome, the process of Italian unification was completed. **As a result, the Papal States ceased to exist, and Rome became the capital of the newly unified Kingdom of Italy.**

During the Dark Ages, the Papacy conducted an Inquisition, which gave the state authority to kill the saints. During this time, no one in Europe could buy, sell, or conduct business without approval and license from the Roman Catholic Church.

Eastern Orthodox Church

The first division in Christianity occurred in the Great Schism of 1054 when the Eastern Orthodox Church separated from the Roman Catholic Church. **The Eastern Orthodox Church contested the authority of the Pope** and emphasized a collective consensus of Bishops. Other differences included the use of leavened bread and Greek text in the Eastern Orthodox Church. There are between 1 and 6 million members of the Eastern Orthodox Church in America.

Church of England

Formed in 16th-century England, the Church of England was the first major Protestant denomination of Christianity. It was associated with the reign of King Henry VIII, which prompted many individuals across Europe to break away from the Roman Catholic Church.

Puritanism

Upon the formation of the Church of England, the Puritanism movement emerged in the late 16th century. The Puritans sought a simpler form of worship, emphasized personal holiness, and stressed the need to lead a devout life through simple living, frugality, and hard work. Their influence on the American colonies through immigration was significant, and their impact can still be observed in the cultural and social landscape of America today.

Lutheranism

The first Protestant denomination to break away from Catholicism was Lutheranism, which was a Reformation movement in Germany in the 16th century. This division was caused by the excessive practices of the Roman Catholic Church at that time. The German monk Martin Luther believed that these practices contradicted true Christianity. Today, there are 3.3 million members of the Evangelical Lutheran Church in America.

Presbyterianism

Drawing inspiration from the 16th-century Protestant Reformation, Presbyterianism was established based on the doctrines of John Knox and John Calvin. It entails a system of elected elders in the Church. It emphasizes simple worship, with followers concentrating on missionary work and addressing social injustice. Today, there are over 1 million Presbyterians in America.

Baptist

Baptists originated in England during the 17th century and were influenced by the Puritanism movement. The Southern Baptist Convention is a significant denomination in the United States. This denomination advocates for the complete immersion of an individual during baptism as a way to cleanse all sin. There are 50 million Baptists in America, constituting 15.3% of the country's population and a third of all American Protestants.

Methodism

Founded in 18th-century England by John Wesley, Methodism positioned itself as a "renewal movement" aligned with Anglicanism. The United Methodist Church is a significant denomination in America. Wesley inspired working-class individuals who were often overlooked by other churches and emphasized salvation through faith in Jesus Christ. Presently, there are 6.5 million Methodists in America.

Mormonism

The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, also known as Mormonism, is a 19th-century Christian denomination founded by Joseph Smith. This group views the Book of Mormon as having equal importance to the Bible. Currently, there are approximately 6.5 million Mormons in America.

Episcopal Church

The Episcopal Church in America, considered an American branch of the Church of England, has a current membership of around 1.5 million. This denomination has some practices in common with the Anglican Church. It maintains the Nicene Creed as a statement of faith, as also used in the Church of England and the Roman Catholic Church.

Seventh-Day Adventist

The Seventh-day Adventist denomination, founded in the 19th century, observes the Sabbath on Saturdays in accordance with the Fourth Commandment, which is a significant departure from the Sunday observance of other Christian denominations. This denomination also promotes vegetarianism and abstains from alcohol and tobacco, reflecting a unique set of beliefs and practices that may pique the interest of the audience. Today, over 1 million Seventh-day Adventists in America adhere to these distinctive principles.

Jehovah's Witness

The Jehovah's Witness denomination in America has about 2.5 million members and is growing every day. Founded in the late 19th century, followers of Jehovah's Witness believe that Jesus Christ is the highest creation of God and that we are currently living in the final days.

Church of the Nazarene

The Church of the Nazarene is a relatively small Christian denomination in America, with around 650,000 members. Established in the late 19th century, it is dedicated to propagating the Gospel and striving for holiness.

Pentecostalism

Christianity's Pentecostal denomination was created in the early 20th century and has amassed a staggering 65 million followers across America. This denomination focuses on experiencing the Holy Spirit with many followers "speaking in tongues" and witnessing practices of divine healing.

Assemblies of God

The Assemblies of God denomination has more than 13,000 churches and 3 million members in America. It was founded in 1914 and is influenced by Pentecostal Christianity, making it a relatively new denomination.

Quakers

The Religious Society of Friends, also known as Quakers, is a Christian denomination that advocates simplicity, pacifism, and silent worship. Quakers uphold strong moral values, reject materialism, and promote equality for all individuals. Quaker women have played a significant role in the movement since its inception, and all Quakers have been outspoken opponents of slavery and the mistreatment of Native Americans. Presently, there are approximately 75,000 Quakers in America.

Christian Science Church

The Christian Science Church was established in the late 19th century. It promotes the belief that sickness, death, and sin are illusions that can be overcome through spiritual empowerment. The Church offers spiritual treatments for those seeking healing. Currently, there are approximately 300,000 members of the Christian Science Church in America.

First Century House Churches

The First-Century House Church was Patterned After Synagogues

Ancient Synagogues

Ancient synagogues were small compared with modern cathedrals and churches. Only those living within a “Sabbath day's journey” (2000 feet) attended. Everyone sat in a square. *Everyone who attended the synagogue was expected to be involved.*

Every male 12 & older was expected to read the scriptures. It was part of his religious training. He was given this opportunity to read a scripture he didn't understand and get the help of the elderly men in the synagogue. As the next person in line, the young man would stand in the center of the synagogue and read so that everyone could see and hear him. It was the scriptures, not the one reading them, that was exalted. In this way, each male over the age of 12 equally took turns reading a short portion from the holy scriptures and then sat down. After the scriptures were read, every man who desired to do so took turns responding to what was read. After everyone was finished speaking and responding in an orderly fashion, the next person in line to read would stand in the middle, read a short portion of scripture, sit down, and so forth.



The First Century House Church

While the apostles were still alive, **the church was the people who believed in Jesus Christ and met for worship *in the home*** of one of the believers.

Everyone sat in a square or circle. The one next to read stood in the center so everyone in the house could see and hear what was being read. The most prized writings were the four gospels, the letters of Paul or one of the other eyewitnesses of Jesus Christ after the resurrection—the Apostles.

Do you want to understand the Scriptures?

Each male over the age of 12 took turns reading a short portion of the scriptures. He read something that he wanted help to understand and then sat down. Then, all the older Christians took turns in an orderly fashion, from youngest to oldest, responding to what was read. After everyone had finished speaking and edifying one another, the next person read from the scriptures something that he wanted help to understand and then sat down, and so forth.

The Early Christian Church

A young man has just finished reading a few verses from the scriptures (usually less than 2 minutes' worth of reading), and sits down. Everyone is sitting in a circle or a square; There are only a couple dozen people in the home. Everyone, in an orderly fashion, from youngest to oldest, took turns sharing what the Holy Ghost had put in their hearts concerning what they heard while the scriptures were being read. There was an elder present who would speak up if an error was made. These first-century house meetings were intensely interesting. No one knew what topics or what scriptures would be discussed in advance. Everyone was given a chance to read the scriptures, and they needed help understanding and had an opportunity to practice answering to defend their faith—every week. The house church trained everyone on how to be Christians and defend the faith.

After Reading the Scriptures, There Is A “Love Feast”

After everyone had their fill of scriptures and edified each other, the women presented to the whole church a love feast filled with all manner of delicious food. While the bread is being passed around and eaten, everyone remembers the broken body of Jesus Christ on the Cross. While the fruit of the vine is being passed around the room for everyone to drink from, the church remembers the blood of Jesus that was sprinkled around the Cross for 6 hours for their sins.

How the Early Church Used the Money That Was Collected

By the time church ends everyone has had a chance to talk to one another and is intimately acquainted with each other's lives. Is all caught up on what happened during the week. Help is offered to any of the poor who need it, and no one goes away wanting anything.

The collections were made for the poor, the widows and the fatherless, and anyone else that had a desperate need. No one had to worry about their daily needs.

Love Your Neighbor

Go two thousand feet in every direction from your home, which is about 4 city blocks. Knock on every neighbor's door, and find as many Christians as you can. Then invite them to your home! Ask each family to bring their bibles and a dish of food to share with everyone after the Bible reading & open discussion. Go from house to house giving each family an opportunity to host the home church in their own homes each week, and take up collections to help the poor and needy in your community.

Ye Are Taught of God to Love One Another.

Next, imagine the unbelievers in town and how they would sit up and take notice. The Christians in town help each other, meet in each other's homes, and love each other. The Christians help the poor, no one that has any need among them is neglected. Christians eat together and are more like a family, than in modern churches.

Invite Your Neighbors to Your Home

Finally imagine how easy it is, to invite unbelievers to visit your home for a meal. Invite them to observe a Bible reading, and enjoy a feast afterward. Who among the thousands of lonely people in your town could turn an offer like that down?

Are there too many for one house church? That is okay! It's time to grow into a community of house churches! Trust each house church to God, that the Holy Spirit will lead each one of them. Where two or three are gathered in Jesus's name, Jesus is there!

What Do You Need to Get Started?

All you need to start a home church is the Holy Bible. If you have a Bible you have everything you need. Invite other Christians and take turns going from house to house. Each able family should bring delicious food to share with everyone afterward. Make sure there is bread and grape juice! Make the time to share the bread and grape juice special. Take up a collection to be used for the poor in your community and also for missionary outreach in your area.

How To Discover Truth?

1. Set aside all preconceived ideas. Opinions don't matter! The Holy Bible is the only source of truth!
2. Find 100% of the verses in the Holy Bible on each topic discussed. Don't leave a single verse out!

3. Believe whatever the Bible says. Conclusions must always line up with 100% of the Bible's verses discovered during Step #2

A Helpful Example: There are approximately 60 verses that discuss what happens at death in the Bible. 95% of these verses teach the exact same thing, so clearly that a child can see it and understand them. Then on the opposite side, there are 1-2 verses that appear to teach something different. So what is the truth? Obviously, we ought to take our stand with the weightier 95% of these verses and what they teach us. The 5% or 1-2 verses that appear to teach something different need to be studied more carefully. In the end, it is always demonstrated that there is 100% unity in the scriptures. Preconceived ideas from what we have been taught over a lifetime might have been preventing us from seeing it.

Most of the major topics in the Bible have 30-40 verses that mention them.

1. **Step 1.** Set aside all preconceived ideas. Opinions don't matter! The Holy Bible is the only source of truth!
2. **Step 2.** Find 100% of the 30-40 verses that speak about the topic being discussed.
3. **Step 3.** Then, determine what 95% of these verses clearly teach and believe whatever those verses teach. After you study the other 5% of these verses more closely, you will always discover 100% unity in the scriptures on every topic.

How Heresy Occurs.

There will always be someone who stubbornly holds on to the "5% or 1-2 verses" and ignores the "95% or 35+ verses" and will not be convinced no matter how many bible texts you show them. That is one way that heresies come into the church.

Hero Worship

Another way heresies enter the church is through "hero worship." A famous church father or person from Church History writes or says something, and no matter how many verses you show them from the Holy Bible, they won't go against their favorite church hero. Do not be deceived by them. This type of person is NOT "a Bible-alone Christian."

Romans 16:17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Do not argue or debate with a heretic; rather, reject them from your home!

Titus 3:10. A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject;

House Churches the Only Churches in the Bible

The Apostles Started House Churches; they were not the Builders of Grand Cathedrals.

Acts 2:46-47 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread **from house to house**, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And **the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.**

Acts 8:3 As for Saul, he made havock of **the church, entering into every house**, and haling men and women committed *them* to prison.

Romans 16:5 Likewise *greet the church that is in their house*. Salute my wellbeloved Epaenetus, who is the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.

1 Corinthians 16:19 ¶ The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with **the church that is in their house**.

Colossians 4:15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and **the church which is in his house**.

1 Timothy 3:5 (For if a man know not how to rule **his own house**, how shall he take care of **the church of God?**)

1 Timothy 3:15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in **the house of God**, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

Philemon 2 And to *our* beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and **to the church in thy house**:

Houses that Followed Peter Were Not Set Above Other Houses

1 Corinthians 1:11-13 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that **every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided?** was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

1 Corinthians 2:2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

1 Corinthians 3:3-6 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? **For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? ¶** Who then is Paul, and who *is* Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man? I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.

1 Corinthians 3:9 For we are labourers together with God: **ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.**

1 Corinthians 3:22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; **all are yours;**

1 Corinthians 4:6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might **learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.**



START A HOUSE CHURCH IN YOUR HOME



PRAY TOGETHER. Update a Prayer List, With Answers to Prayer, & New Prayer Requests.



NO SERMONS | NO BIBLE TEACHERS
TAKE TURNS READING THE BIBLE



SING HYMNS TOGETHER



LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR
INVITE FAMILY, FRIENDS, COWORKERS & NEIGHBORS



HOST A HOUSE CHURCH IN YOUR OWN HOME



Potluck Dinner
EAT BREAD AND DRINK WINE (GRAPE JUICE), TOGETHER



TAKE UP COLLECTIONS FOR THE POOR, DO GOOD WORKS!



Baptise All That Believe in Jesus Christ, and Repent of Their Sins



"I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator... with such an one no not to eat." 1 Corinthians 5:11

How to do a "House Church" or Home Bible Study Group

All that is needed is your Bibles. A pastor and a sermon is not necessary! You can study topically or work your way through a book of the Bible, one verse at a time.

1. Start by inviting people you see regularly to "join some friends and our families for a Bible study. There will be a meal afterward."
2. Start with prayer requests, write them down, and update the list each week.
3. Read and study the Bible. Every male over the age of 12, take turns reading a verse or two. Allow the young men to choose something they want help understanding. In an orderly fashion, starting with the young men, working your way up to the elderly, find related verses that can help explain and discuss what was read.
4. Gather a collection / financial offerings to help anyone in need, especially those of your own house church.
5. Remember the body and blood of Christ, examine yourselves, wait for each other to be ready, then enjoy a meal together,

“Not for that we have dominion over your faith” 2 Corinthians 1:24

*“For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.”
Matthew 18:20*

Q. Which Church Do You Go To?

- “I go to the church at the house of My family and I are followers of Christ. We are called Christians.”

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even Christ*; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even Christ*. **Matthew 23:8-10**

Evangelists, Bishops, Elders & Deacons

Evangelists

Acts 6:1-7 ¶ And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. **Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples *unto them*, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.** Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and **they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parnenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch:** Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands on them. And **the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.**

Acts 21:8 ¶ And the next *day* we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Caesarea: and we entered into the house of **Philip the evangelist, which was *one of the seven*; and abode with him.**

Ephesians 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, **evangelists**; and some, pastors and teachers;

2 Timothy 4:5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, **do the work of an evangelist**, make full proof of thy ministry.

Bishops

Timothy 3:1-7 ¶ This is a true saying, If a man desire **the office of a bishop**, he desireth a good work. **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;** (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) **Not a novice**, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which **the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.**

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, **with the bishops** and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

2 Timothy 4:22 The Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen. The second *epistle* unto **Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians**, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

Titus 3:15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace *be* with you all. Amen. It was written to **Titus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians**, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

1 Peter 2:25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto **the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.**

Elders

1 Timothy 5:1 ¶ Rebuke not **an elder**, but intreat *him* as a father; *and* the younger men as brethren;

1 Timothy 5:17 Let **the elders that rule well** be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

1 Timothy 5:19 Against **an elder** receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

Titus 1:5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and **ordain elders in every city**, as I had appointed thee:

Hebrews 11:1-2 ¶ Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For **by it the elders obtained a good report**.

James 5:14 Is any sick among you? let him **call for the elders of the church**; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

1 Peter 5:1 ¶ The elders which are among you **I exhort, who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

1 Peter 5:5 ¶ Likewise, ye younger, **submit yourselves unto the elder**. Yea, all *of you* be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

2 John 1 ¶ The elder unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

3 John 1 ¶ The elder unto the wellbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

Deacons

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:8-13 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless. Even so *must their wives be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Ministers & Pastors

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even Christ*; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even Christ*. **Matthew 23:8-10**

2 Chronicles 15:3 Now for a long season Israel *hath been* without the true God, and without a **teaching priest**, and without law.

Jeremiah 3:15 And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

Jeremiah 17:16 As for me, I have not hastened from *being* a pastor to follow thee: neither have I desired the woeful day; thou knowest: **that which came out of my lips was *right* before thee.**

Matthew 28:20 **Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:** and, lo, I am with you *always, even unto the end of the world.* Amen.

Acts 13:1 ¶ Now there were **in the church that was at Antioch** certain prophets and **teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon** that was called Niger, and **Lucius** of Cyrene, and **Manaen**, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, **and Saul.**

Romans 12:7 Or ministry, ***let us wait on our* ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching;**

1 Corinthians 12:29 Are all apostles? *are* all prophets? ***are* all teachers?** *are* all workers of miracles?

Hebrews 5:12 For when for the time **ye ought to be teachers**, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

1 Peter 5:1-3 ¶ **The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over *God's* heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

Not Greedy of Filthy Lucre

Isaiah 56:11 Yea, ***they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand:*** they all look to their own way, **every one for his gain**, from his quarter.

1 Timothy 3:3 Not given to wine, no striker, **not greedy of filthy lucre;** but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

1 Timothy 3:8 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, **not greedy of filthy lucre;**

Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, **not given to filthy lucre;**

Titus 1:11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, **for filthy lucre's sake.**

1 Peter 5:2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; **not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind;

Jude 11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and **ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward**, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

Not Adorned with Costly Array & Jewelry

Matthew 11:7-8 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, *What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft *clothing* are in kings' houses.*

1 Timothy 2:9-10 ¶ In like manner also, **that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array;** But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

1 Peter 3:1-6 ¶ Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with fear. **Whose adorning let it not be that outward *adorning* of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;** But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

Preach the Word—Not Philosophy & Fables

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

Deuteronomy 6:12 *Then* beware lest thou forget the LORD, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

Matthew 7:15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

Matthew 10:17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

Matthew 16:6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Philippians 3:2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

2 Peter 3:17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Song of Solomon 2:15 Take us the foxes, the little foxes, that spoil the vines: for our vines *have* tender grapes.

Jeremiah 29:8 ¶ For thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Let not your prophets and your diviners, that *be* in the midst of you, deceive you, neither hearken to your dreams which ye cause to be dreamed.

Romans 16:17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Ephesians 5:6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Hebrews 13:9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

2 John 8 Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

Acts 17:18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

Acts 17:32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this *matter*.

Romans 1:21-22 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified *him* not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

1 Corinthians 1:19-23 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where *is* the wise? where *is* the scribe? where *is* the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;

1 Corinthians 3:18-19 ¶ Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

1 Corinthians 15:35-36 ¶ But some *man* will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? *Thou* fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:

2 Corinthians 10:5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

1 Timothy 6:20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

2 Timothy 2:17 And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus;

2 Timothy 2:18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

2 Timothy 3:13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

Not after the commandments and doctrines of men

Colossians 2:22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

Matthew 15:2-9 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, *Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

Mark 7:3-13 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, *Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.*

Galatians 1:14 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 1

By David Michael Curtis

The document "Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 1" by David Michael Curtis argues that modern church practices, particularly the practice of paying pastors and having them deliver sermons, deviate from the practices described in the Book of Acts and the teachings of the Apostle Paul.

Here are the key points:

- **Early Church Practices:** The document emphasizes that early Christians met in house churches, where elders did not deliver sermons but rather oversaw the gathering and safeguarded against heresy. Everyone participated, sharing their gifts. Deacons were responsible for distributing offerings to widows and orphans.
- **Role of Elders:** Elders, also referred to as bishops or pastors, were expected to have regular jobs and support their families. They were not paid from church offerings. The document cites 2 Thessalonians 3:6-11 and 1 Timothy 5:8 to support this.
- **Offerings:** Offerings were intended for widows, orphans, and traveling evangelists, not for supporting local elders.
- **Historical Discrepancies:** The document states that institutional churches, the practice of bishops delivering sermons, and pews are later developments that began in the fourth century with Constantine and evolved over time.
- **Against Modern Practices:** It criticizes the modern practice of pastors being paid to deliver sermons, arguing that this is not scriptural and detracts from the original purpose of offerings. The author suggests that pastors should find employment and that church members should participate more actively in gatherings.
- **Communal Living:** The document distinguishes between biblical practices and communal living, noting that the Book of Acts reveals that early Christians maintained their own homes and held jobs.
- **Equality:** The document emphasizes the equality of all believers, including apostles and elders, and argues against the idea of a hierarchical structure with a superior leader.
- **Call to Action:** The author suggests that church members should consider "firing" their pastor and encourage them to seek employment elsewhere.

In essence, the document advocates for a return to what the author believes are the original biblical practices of church gatherings, leadership, and the use of offerings.

Dear friends,

Church Leadership and Practices

Fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. In the book of Acts, we see the roles of apostles and deacons established in the early chapters. The apostles preached both at the temple and from house to house, and the church continued to adhere to their doctrine. What was their doctrine? It consisted of the foundational teachings that Christ laid out, which are listed in Hebrews 6:1-2. These include turning from sin, trusting God, and being baptized.

The Purpose of the Temple and the Role of Deacons

First, we need to understand the purpose of the temple where the apostles taught, which was to make atonement for the sins of Israel. This atonement was achieved through annual animal sacrifices performed by the high priest on the Day of Atonement. The apostles and deacons preached that atonement was now possible only through the blood of Christ and that forgiveness of sins was no longer attainable through the law of Moses. This is why the leaders of Israel were so upset with the apostles and deacons, frequently accusing them of teaching against the law of Moses.

So, what were the duties of a deacon? The office of deacon was established so that the apostles could focus on teaching and preaching. Deacons were responsible for taking the offerings collected and distributing them to widows and orphans, ensuring that the apostles could concentrate on their teaching without distraction. In contrast to modern deacons, who are often seen as responsible for minor tasks, such as vacuuming carpets in institutional churches, the deacons in the Book of Acts had significant responsibilities in assisting the needy.

The Source of Offerings and the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans

Where did this money come from? It came from new converts who sold their houses and lands and laid the proceeds at the feet of the apostles. One of the seven deacons mentioned was named Nicholas, after whom the doctrine of the Nicolaitans is named in the Book of Revelation. This serves as a warning that even men who had their hands laid on them and were appointed to an office by the apostles could fall into apostasy and become leaders of false doctrines condemned by Jesus in His messages to the seven churches in Revelation.

Apostasy and the Importance of Marital Fidelity

Therefore, we should not assume that everyone ordained, even by apostles, is a true man of God. Someone can fall into apostasy through sexual immorality. The doctrine of the Nicolaitans, for example, stemmed from Nicholas's decision to stop having sexual relations with his wife. In contrast, the Apostle Paul taught that husbands are to show due benevolence to their wives, love them, and cherish their bodies. Paul emphasized the importance of meeting their wives' needs. Nicholas's doctrine eventually contributed to the idea of celibacy in the priesthood, which forbade marriage.

Elders and House Churches

Let us return to our topic today: Fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. House churches began to emerge after the Day of Pentecost when 3,000 people were converted during the preaching of the 120 in various languages. If we assume there were thirty men per house, that would mean 1,000 house churches started on that very first day. That is a substantial number of house churches!

The early Christians had ample resources to construct buildings because many of those 3,000 sold their houses and lands, laying the proceeds at the apostles' feet. However, they did not use that money to build institutional churches. From the very beginning, Christians met in homes and did not use offerings to construct buildings.

Each house church had an elder appointed to oversee it. While the elder was capable of teaching, the practice of an elder delivering sermons on Sunday mornings did not begin until the fourth century. During that time, Constantine started constructing basilicas and cathedrals. A cathedral is the house of the cathedra, which is the chair of the Bishop. The Bishop would sit in the cathedral while everyone else stood and listened to his sermon. This practice, rooted in tradition, originated in the fourth century and lacks a scriptural basis.

The Role of Elders and the Expectation of Labor

The terms "elder," "bishop," and "pastor" all refer to the same role, with no distinctions between them. During the first three centuries of the church, elders did not stand before the congregation or deliver sermons on Sunday mornings. Rather than this, elders would sit on the living room floor alongside everyone else. The elder was not the central figure and spoke neither more nor less than any other participant in the group. It would be unrealistic to expect that a special collection was made to cover the living expenses of elders who shared a space on the floor of a home. While scriptural evidence supports the notion that the church was to assist traveling evangelists and apostles, particularly during times of imprisonment when they lacked necessities, there is no scriptural basis for the church to pay an "elder," "bishop," and "pastor" or be responsible for their living costs. The pastor is not a Levite priest, meaning we do not owe him a tenth of our income.

An elder, like any other church member, was expected to have employment to meet his expenses and mortgage obligations and support his family. The Apostle Paul asserted that if an elder chose not to work, he would be deemed as "walking disorderly." Paul stated that we should avoid associations with those who refuse to work or provide for their families.

2 Thessalonians 3:6-11 NIV

6. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers and sisters, to keep away from every believer who is idle and disruptive and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.
7. For you yourselves know how you ought to follow our example. We were not idle when we were with you,
8. nor did we eat anyone's food without paying for it. On the contrary, we worked night and day, laboring and toiling so that we would not be a burden to any of you.
9. We did this not because we do not have the right to such help but in order to offer ourselves as a model for you to imitate.
10. For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "The one who is unwilling to work shall not eat."
11. We have heard that some among you are idle and disruptive. They are not busy; they are busybodies.

Does the Bible teach that "a laborer is worthy of his hire?" Yes, it does. Did offerings support men in the ministry? Yes, those were apostles and evangelists who traveled and spread the Gospel. A modern application would be to support missionaries working in famine-stricken regions, who often have less than \$150 a month in support. The offerings were not given to the local elders.

While on his travels, Paul crafted tents to sustain himself and encouraged all the men in the churches he founded to work and support their families. He stressed that anyone who fails to work and care for his family is worse than someone who does not believe. The men, including elders, in the churches established by Paul were taught to work, provide for themselves, and care for their families.

1 Timothy 5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

False prophets preach Christ for the sake of greed. In contrast, the elders in the Bible had jobs; they were not paid to teach but instead worked, earned their bread, and took care of their families. Is your pastor being paid to teach? Is he willing to stop taking money from the widows and orphans fund, get a job, and still share his doctrines without being paid to do so?

Communal Living vs. Biblical Practices

A few blocks from where I am driving right now, there is a communal living house owned by the Yellow Deli people. Everyone who lives there works for no pay; they do not earn any money and practice communal living. They believe they are following the principles described in the Book of Acts. However, the Book of Acts does not describe communal living; instead, it shows that everyone had their own house, worked, earned money, and took care of themselves and their families.

In Acts 2-3, we see that the early Christians went from house to house, indicating that each family lived in a different home. The wealthier families did sell some houses; they kept a home for their family to live in. The Apostle Paul emphasized the importance of working to support one's family, stating that anyone who does not provide for them is worse than an unbeliever.

The Yellow Deli is not Christian; it is a cult that originated in the 1970s. The Yellow Deli staff work slavish hours but practice communal living without compensation for their labor. They send all the profits made at the local Yellow Deli to Australia, where others manage the money. Meanwhile, these hippies work for free and own extraordinarily little—just personal items like toothbrushes, hairbrushes, and their wives. They do not share their wives or personal hygiene items, but everything else is collectively owned and not owned by any individual.

This practice does not align with what we read in the Book of Acts or the writings of the Apostle Paul. Each Christian family in the early church had its own home, occupation, and responsibilities to care for its own family. As God prospered them, any surplus they had after supporting their families and widows was given as a free offering each Sunday morning when they met in house churches. This money was used to support widows and orphans in the church who were unable to care for themselves.

Every man was expected to hold a job, and if they declined to do so, Paul directed that they should go without food and be excluded from fellowship. Thus, any man who “walketh disorderly,” refusing to work, faced disfellowshipping until he secured employment.

Modern Pastors and Historical Discrepancies

In many modern churches, there are individuals called pastors who often do not hold regular jobs. Instead, they rely on the offerings provided by the congregation on a weekly basis.

In DeSoto County, we have an independent Baptist minister who owns a significant amount of land and has built the largest house I have seen in the county. This has been made possible through the offerings at a Baptist church in Port Charlotte, which consists of approximately 200 families. This church is conservative and independent, using the King James Version of the Bible. I would describe this pastor and his family as conservative. However, he does not have a job, nor does he support his family through labor. Instead, they are financially supported by the offerings of that church, which, biblically, ought to go to widows, orphans, and those experiencing homelessness and poverty. He is taking money that could feed widows and is not working to provide for his family himself.

What I am sharing is not debatable; it is a historical fact. It is well-documented that institutional churches were not established until the fourth century, during the time of Constantine. It is a well-known fact that the role of a bishop delivering sermons from a central stage in a cathedral dates back to the fourth century. During the first three hundred years of Christianity, believers met in homes and caves while hiding from the persecution of various Roman emperors.

In those early years, elders did not deliver sermons each Sunday morning. This is not a matter of interpretation; how your church interprets the Bible does not change history. A church could interpret the Bible to say that the sky was yellow, but it would not change the fact that the sky is blue.

The Evolution of Church Practices

In modern times, the roles of pastor and elder are distinguished as two different offices. However, in scripture, the pastor and elder were the same person holding the same office. During the first three hundred years, pastors or elders did not deliver sermons. The early church did not have members passively listening to sermons each Sunday; rather, they gathered in circles facing each other in a living room and actively engaged in conversation.

This practice is described in 1 Corinthians 12, where it states that everyone in the house church had different gifts and was to exercise those gifts each Sunday. Some would sing, some would pray, and others would edify the group. For instance, if someone spoke in a different language, an interpreter was responsible for translating that message. Imagine an English-speaking church where a person gifted in Chinese delivered a message in that language; someone with the gift of interpretation would then translate it into English.

These gatherings typically involved about 30 to 35 people sitting in the living room, facing each other and actively participating in the church community. The modern practice of passively facing a pulpit and listening to sermons is not indicative of true church tradition; this practice began in the fourth century. Additionally, the practice of sitting in pews did not begin until the 18th century.

During the Reformation, when many Roman Catholic churches transitioned to Protestant churches, Martin Luther would ascend a stairway to an elevated pulpit. At the same time, everyone else stood about ten feet lower on the ground floor. They did not sit in pews; rather, they stood for the entire lecture delivered by Dr. Martin Luther. Aren't you glad you do not have to stand during the sermon, especially if the pastor preaches for over an hour? That method of worship continued until the 1700s.

The History of Pews

In the 18th century, wooden boxes were constructed and sold, becoming the property of wealthy church members. These boxes allowed individuals to step inside, close the door, and enjoy privacy. Many were carpeted, and people even brought their animals to church, sitting inside their boxes with them. After the service, they could lock these wooden boxes.

When we visit Christ Church, where the founding fathers of the United States attended for decades, we can see the pews that were purchased by them, which still bear their names, including those of Benjamin Franklin and George Washington. This was a shift from the wooden boxes, which were no longer in use. Later in the 1700s, wooden benches, now commonly referred to as pews, were developed.

This traditional seating arrangement, with everyone facing forward, encourages passive listening to the pastor's sermon. It disconnects us from one another and limits interaction.

The core purpose of the church was to edify one another, to exercise the spiritual gifts bestowed by the Holy Spirit, and to support fellow members with these gifts. In a pew, everyone remains silent, passively listening to a sermon, while only the speaker's gift is utilized, which is not scriptural.

The sermon, delivered from the pulpit, has a traditional foundation rooted in human doctrine, dating back to the fourth century. This is not open to interpretation. Regardless of how your church interprets different verses, this is a historical fact. You might consider firing your pastor and encouraging him to find employment instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows.

The Role of Elders and Deacons in Early Churches

In the first three centuries, the church began with gatherings in homes led by an elder and a deacon. The elder's role was to safeguard against heresy. If someone visited and preached false teachings, the elder would admonish that person once or twice and then avoid further interaction.

The church was intended to be organic, as noted by modern authors discussing house churches. This means that the elder was not the center of attention; instead, the congregation sat in a circle in a living room setting. One person might offer a prayer, another would share a psalm, and in turn, they could read from the letters of Paul or other apostles. The idea was that everyone participated, sharing their gifts and edifying one another.

However, by the second century, individuals began to identify themselves as church fathers, and they created new positions as overseers of multiple churches. These offices did not exist during the time the New Testament was being written. During the second and third centuries, autonomous house churches began sending offerings to these new "overseers" known as bishops. This new class of Bishops emerged in cities like Antioch and Alexandria, overseeing several cities consisting of dozens of house churches.

In the fourth century, bishops would preach while positioned on a cathedra (seat of authority) situated on an elaborately decorated platform at the front of the cathedral, where it was expected that everyone would listen passively. Thus, the tradition was born into history, replacing the active, vibrant, and engaging house churches that the apostles planted with dry and boring institutional churches.

False Apostles and the True Foundation of the Church

While the New Testament was being composed, false apostles were already traveling alongside the twelve apostles, including Paul. The Book of Revelation mentions that one of the seven churches rejected those who claimed to be apostles but were not. Similarly, in the second and third centuries, people claimed to be bishops without genuine authority, establishing positions that lacked a foundation during the apostolic era.

The New Testament indicates that no other foundation can be laid than the one that Christ and the apostles laid. The foundation laid by Christ and the apostles involved house churches, each led by an elder and a deacon. The deacon's role was to distribute offerings to widows and orphans and assist those living in poverty. Their duties did not include mundane tasks like vacuuming carpets.

The elder was inclined to teach and acted as a shepherd, safeguarding the community from false teachings. He did not deliver sermons in the way we see today; instead, he sat in the living room alongside everyone else, remaining mostly quiet and intervening only to teach or confront heretics. If someone were teaching heresy, the elder would speak to them privately about their offense and then involve two or three others to address the issue, emphasizing the need for repentance. If the individual did not repent after one or two admonitions, they would be rejected from the house church and not permitted to return.

However, there were house churches that did not follow this pattern, and entire congregations were led astray by false teachers who infiltrated these homes and spread their heresies. Later, in the second century, some individuals emerged claiming to hold a special office, such as an overseer or bishop. They asserted authority over several churches and eventually over multiple cities of churches. This concept is a departure from the foundation laid by Christ and the apostles.

Equality Among Apostles and Elders

The idea that Peter is the chief shepherd is contrary to the original foundation established by Christ and the apostles. Jesus affirmed that the gates of Hell would not prevail against it. When we examine the first three chapters of 1 Corinthians, we see that Peter, Apollos, and Paul founded house churches. This text specifically addresses whether Peter was superior to the others. The apostle Paul instructed against divisions, stating that we were not baptized into Peter, Paul, or Apollos but rather into Christ. He emphasized that these three men were not crucified for us—Jesus was. He urged us to stop creating divisions among ourselves.

Therefore, the notion that there is a church founded by Peter that is superior to one founded by Paul is debunked in 1 Corinthians, chapters one through three. This issue is clearly discussed. The churches founded by Peter were not superior to those established by the other apostles. Such divisions were to be rejected.

Furthermore, both the Apostle Peter and the Apostle John identified themselves as elders, indicating that they were brothers and not superior to the other elders despite being apostles. Jesus taught that we are all equal and should regard one another as brothers and sisters in Christ. We are not to call anyone "Rabbi" or "Father," nor should we view anyone as holding a holy office that is separate or superior to ourselves. Rather, we are to see everyone as equal.

In summary, Peter, Paul, and Apollos all established house churches that held equal status. The foundation of the church is Christ, who died for us.

It may be time to reconsider the leadership within your church; perhaps you should fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. When the church began, elders were not meant to sit around without working and living off offerings from the house church while everyone else took care of their families. Why would they do that? You might say a laborer is worthy of his wages, but the elder did not really do much. He did not deliver a sermon each week but instead sat in the living room like everyone else, speaking up only when heresy was being taught. His role was to safeguard the congregation from false teachings. If everything was running smoothly, he quietly allowed everyone else to participate in the church, exercising their gifts and edifying one another.

If you find yourself passively sitting in a pew, listening to only one person exercise their gift—and that gift is questionable and not even biblical—then the members of the church are having their gifts stifled. 1 Corinthians 12 asks, "Are we all the same member? Don't we all have different gifts?" Yet, the modern institutional church often has only one gift: that of the orator or speaker who delivers lectures. These presentations may include one or two verses but often consist of human interpretation rather than biblical teaching. It would be better to read the Scripture together without interpretation, taking turns reading a chapter, rather than listening to one person monopolize the time with their interpretations.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 2

By David Michael Curtis

Based on the provided document "Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 2.pdf" by David Michael Curtis, here's a summary of its key points:

- **Critique of Paid Pastors:** The document strongly advocates for firing pastors who are financially supported by church offerings. It argues that pastors should have regular jobs and not rely on church funds, which should be reserved for widows, orphans, and those truly in need.
- **Early Church Practices:** It asserts that early Christian house churches did not have paid pastors or formal sermons. Elders were not compensated and had secular jobs. Sermons became a common practice much later, around the fourth century.
- **Equality of Elders:** The author emphasizes that in the early church, there was no hierarchy among elders. They were all equal, and even the Apostle Paul did not claim authority over the faith of others.
- **Rejection of Hierarchical Structures:** The document criticizes the hierarchical structure of churches, such as the Roman Catholic Church, with positions including priests, bishops, cardinals, and the Pope. It argues that these structures are not based on biblical examples.
- **Authority of Scripture:** It emphasizes the importance of building faith in the Bible rather than in church fathers or later church traditions. The author points out contradictions among church fathers and within various denominations, advocating for adherence to the clear teachings of Scripture.
- **House Churches:** The document suggests establishing house churches with elders and deacons, where participation is expected from everyone, and offerings are used to support the needy and missionaries who teach the true gospel.
- **Financial Responsibility:** It emphasizes personal financial responsibility and discourages taking advantage of church offerings. It asserts that those who can work should do so and provide for themselves and their families.
- **Discernment and Separation:** The author encourages discernment regarding teachings and calls for separation from false prophets and teachings. It advises choosing elders who are skilled in teaching and guarding against heresy.
- **Gospel and Baptism:** The document defines the gospel as Christ's death for our sins, burial, and resurrection and emphasizes the importance of repentance and baptism for salvation.

In essence, the document argues for a return to what the author believes are the original practices of the early Christian church, with a focus on simplicity, equality, financial responsibility, and adherence to Scripture.

“In apostolic times, there was no distinction between bishops, elders, or presbyters (**Acts** 20:17-28; **1 Peter** 5:1-2; **Philippians** 1:1; **1 Timothy** 3). The term "bishop" is never used to denote a different office from that of elder or presbyter.” – **Easton's Bible Dictionary**

Dear Friends

Consider firing your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. If anyone in the church is walking disorderly and refuses to work, you should not fellowship with that person or share a meal with them. This is intended to make them feel ashamed and encourage them to find employment. According to the Apostle Paul, if someone refuses to work and support their family, they are worse than an infidel.

You are not obligated to provide compensation to a minister for preaching sermons. Elders in the early house churches did not deliver formal lectures or sermons. Additionally, the elders did not visit homes or spend time with their wives and children when the father was absent. Sermons did not become a common practice until the fourth century. Nonetheless, the practice of a wolf in sheep's clothing visiting homes during the man's absence was already in place when Paul composed his letters.

2 Timothy 3:5-6 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

The elder was apt to teach, but this was not a compensated position. No financial assistance was offered to help elders cover their living expenses. Instead, offerings were intended to assist widows, orphans, and traveling evangelists, with deacons managing the distribution rather than a treasurer.

The Emergence of Monasticism and Clerical Authority

When looking into church history, we can trace various departures from the foundations laid by Christ and the apostles. One such departure involved a lifestyle characterized by a lack of stable income, leading individuals to resort to begging for money and food. Distinct groups formed, such as monks and friars, who adopted a form of godliness and vowed to live in poverty. This vow was essentially a commitment to disobedience to the teachings of the apostles, who instructed all men to work and take care of themselves and their families.

These monks became a burden on the peasants, who owned no land and were taxed by kings, landowners, and the church. Despite their struggles to feed themselves, they were expected to give even more to begging monks who refused to work for their bread. This practice created resentment among the peasants and misled them into believing that this was Christianity. They were taught that Christ and the apostles demanded that they labor like slaves, giving all their earnings to landowners, the king, and the church—while also providing for begging monks.

This practice continues today, as some pastors expect payment for delivering a sermon just once a week. Instead of working a full-time job, they often spend only about an hour or two per week working.

The apostles identified as elders, indicating equality among themselves and with the elders in your church. They were not superior to others. In First Corinthians, the Apostle Paul states that he did not exercise authority over our faith. This was Paul speaking, and even as he wrote this letter, which holds authority, he did not have authority over their faith. He was an elder, just like every other elder, who were all equal. The Apostle Paul was subject to the principles he wrote about; he was not above them.

How do I know this? Read Galatians 1:8-9. Paul states that even if we or an angel teach a different gospel, it is to be condemned. If the Apostle Paul taught something contrary to the gospel based on his authority, it would be considered a curse. His writings are scripture, and we are subject to that scripture. It is inerrant and can withstand all criticism. It is to be obeyed, followed and believed.

What I am distinguishing is that Paul did not have an authority invested in him that allowed him to say whatever he pleased or teach whatever he wanted. He had to teach what Christ commanded him to convey. He was an apostle called by God through Jesus Christ, tasked with delivering the message that God gave him.

2 Corinthians 1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

The notion that individuals were assigned to supervise various churches, to whom we are expected to yield, is something Paul himself never asserted. He highlighted that the apostles do not exercise authority over our faith. In the second and third centuries, overseers or bishops began to emerge, assuming roles that allowed them to collect offerings from multiple churches and insist that those congregations adhere to their teachings. This marked a shift away from the principles established by Christ and the Apostles. The core message is that we are called to turn away from sin, place our trust in God, and undergo baptism. As followers of Christ, we are meant to follow the Good Shepherd and avoid using terms like "Rabbi" or "Father" for anyone.

The Roman Catholic Church and Hierarchical Structures

Right across the street from where I am recording this is a Roman Catholic Church, where ministers are called priests and referred to as fathers. This directly violates Christ's commandment not to call any man on Earth your father. That, by itself, signals to me that it is not Christian. Christianity is based on teaching obedience to what Christ commanded. He explicitly commanded us not to call any man on Earth father or rabbi and stated that Christ is our master and teacher. He is the head of the church, and we are all equal—whether we are apostles, elders, deacons, or simply individuals attending a house church. We all have one head: Christ.

In the Roman Catholic Church, there is a position known as Pontifex Maximus, one of the titles held by the Pope. This title, however, is not inherently Christian; in fact, there was no Pontifex Maximus during the time of the apostles. Even if such a position existed, it was not Peter who held it. The head of the Jerusalem Council was actually James, the brother of Christ. Therefore, if Peter became Pontifex Maximus after James was martyred, it would be too late for the church to be built on Peter as its foundation since James was the first leader of the Jerusalem Church, not Peter. Additionally, James was not referred to as Pontifex Maximus.

The office of Pontifex Maximus existed centuries before Christ established the church. In Roman religion, there was a high priest known as the Pontifex Maximus. This hierarchical structure, which included senators during the Republic, is reflected today in the Vatican, where we have a Pontifex Maximus (the Pope) and a Senate composed of Cardinals. Beneath the Cardinals are subordinate leaders called bishops, who oversee specific dioceses and their churches. Each church is required to pay a tax to the bishop, while one or more priests serve local churches.

This is a pyramid structure, and none of these offices existed in the house churches that Peter, Paul, and Apollos founded. In those house churches, there were simply elders and deacons; there was no overseer over multiple house churches. Such positions did not arise until the second century when these so-called Church Fathers began asserting authority and demanding taxes from various churches under their jurisdiction. These roles were artificial, not appointed by the apostles, as these bishops claimed their territories from which they taxed the churches below them.

By the 11th century, a significant event known as the Great Schism had occurred, dividing the Roman Catholic Church and the Eastern Orthodox Church. This schism was primarily caused by the Bishop of Rome claiming a position of authority over all other bishops, a claim that the Eastern Orthodox Church rejected. The origin of this tradition dates back to 606 AD when the Byzantine emperor bestowed the title of "overseer of all bishops" upon the Bishop of Rome. Four hundred years later, the Great Schism occurred when Eastern bishops refused to submit to the authority of the Roman bishop. In contrast, bishops in the West, now known as cardinals, acknowledged the authority of the Pope, also known as the Pontifex Maximus.

This is the history of the church, and it is not open for debate; these events truly occurred. Given this, we ought not only to fire the pastor but also to dismiss the priests, bishops, Cardinals, and the Pope, urging them to find legitimate employment and support themselves rather than residing in extravagant palaces built with the contributions of the poor, originally intended to assist widows and orphans.

Church Fathers and the Authority of Scripture

Throughout the history of the church, the authentic church is depicted as hidden in the wilderness, as mentioned in Revelation 12. When reading a church history book — and I have read several — keep in mind that you are examining a church that has its Church Fathers, bishops, Cardinals, and Pope. Meanwhile, the true church was concealed, living in caves and secretly traveling across Europe as missionaries, distributing scripture during times when possessing scripture in one's

language was forbidden. Those caught doing so could face the Inquisition, torture, or even martyrdom at the hands of the institutional church described in history.

These men are referred to as Church Fathers because their influence began when they, like wolves in sheep's clothing, appeared in history, claiming authority over the faith and imposing taxes on local house churches, amassing wealth for themselves.

So, everyone who followed in their footsteps—calling themselves bishops, cardinals, and popes—rests their authority on the authority of the church fathers. It is a house of cards. The church fathers did not possess any true authority; they asserted authority, granted it to themselves, and aimed to make other men their disciples. We have a vast amount of their writing—some say it exceeds one million pages. Within these works, various discussions occur, and these church fathers often disagree with one another. They taught different doctrines and held contrasting beliefs.

The Roman Catholic Church claims that these writings are harmonious and promotes this idea in its schools, presenting selected quotes to its laypeople in churches. Roman Catholics are presented with a carefully curated set of quotes to create a false sense of unity within the Church Fathers' writings. In reality, they contradicted each other.

Dr. Martin Luther, at the Diet of Worms, pointed out that the church fathers, councils, and popes contradicted each other. Because of this, it is impossible to follow these men, as they all say different things, teach different doctrines and contradict one another. This is the state of things; it is the truth. Following the church fathers requires you to choose which one you will submit to, as they do not agree with each other.

Therefore, I encourage you to build your faith on the solid rock of the Bible. The Bible is in harmony; it is unified and can withstand the criticisms of the entire world.

If you are following authorities that emerged after the apostles wrote the New Testament, you are following false shepherds. Anyone who claims a position of authority over your faith is a false shepherd. I want to highlight the same obvious truth that Martin Luther pointed out at the Diet of Worms, but this time, I am directing it toward evangelicals.

If you say, "I am a Baptist," that does not convey much. Baptists disagree among themselves on nearly every aspect of doctrine taught within the Baptist Church. Claiming to be a Baptist does not clearly define your beliefs. There are Baptists who are Calvinists and those who reject Calvinism. There are Baptists who hold one view and others who contradict it across the entire spectrum of Baptist teaching.

Identifying as a Seventh-day Adventist doesn't accurately convey your beliefs to me. There are liberal Seventh-day Adventists who often disregard the traditional teachings of the church and hold differing views on salvation than the conservatives within the Adventist community. Some Seventh-day Adventists are quite evangelical, while others are more conservative and view the evangelical members as apostates.

Simply stating, “I am a Seventh-day Adventist,” fails to clarify your beliefs. Some followers uphold the investigative judgment, while others have moved away from it. This distinction significantly alters the understanding of salvation between these two groups. So, do you align yourself with Ellen G. White's teachings or with a contemporary evangelist who has diverged from her principles? Do you believe that only vegan Sabbath keepers will receive God's seal during a Sunday law? Or do you find that notion absurd?

This same issue can be seen when someone claims to belong to any organized church. Each church contains vastly different beliefs within its ranks. This is the issue Martin Luther highlighted at the Diet of Worms. Which type of Roman Catholic are you? There are dozens of variations of Roman Catholicism, with sharp disagreements within them.

Martin Luther, at the Diet of Worms, stated that the church fathers, councils, and popes contradicted each other. I suggest that regardless of the church—be it Baptist, Seventh-Day Adventist, or any other denomination—there are contradictions in virtually every single doctrine, or at least in some core tenets of that faith. This means that you must choose which church fathers within your institutional church you wish to believe in and follow as disciples.

Departure from Biblical Church Patterns

What I am sharing today is not the pattern that was laid down at the foundation of the Church. We are not meant to be disciples of any man, nor should we refer to any man as our rabbi or father. I do not care what the church fathers wrote; they hold no significance for me. I do not read about church fathers in scripture; I read about apostles, prophets, evangelists, and teachers, but not about church fathers who were bishops over regions of house churches. That office did not exist.

The priest conducting a mass did not exist, nor did a Senate or a group of Cardinals in the Vatican. These things are not found in scripture. Additionally, Peter was certainly not the head of the Jerusalem Church; that role belonged to James. The only thing the Council at Jerusalem commanded the Gentile churches was not to eat anything strangled or with blood and not to commit fornication. It was amazingly simple; they provided just a few instructions in Acts 15: if you eat meat, ensure that it has been properly bled, and do not commit fornication.

The Jerusalem Council and House Church Autonomy

That was all the instruction that James, Peter, and the apostles provided during the Jerusalem Council. They respected the autonomy of the house churches and refrained from imposing authority over their faith. They recognized that Christ was the head of the church, present among them and leading them. There was no need for a bishop, cardinal, or pope. Jesus was in their midst, and He was the head of the church, providing gifts through the Holy Spirit, which the church was to exercise during their gatherings in a house setting.

Participation should be expected from everyone, not just a single person giving a sermon. If your offerings support individuals who do not have jobs and are engaged in self-appointed work based

on tradition—not outlined in Scripture, such as giving sermons or conducting masses—then these individuals should seek employment and provide for themselves. They are walking disorderly.

Establishing House Churches and Supporting Missionaries

I suggest starting a house church. Appoint a deacon to handle the offerings. Ensure that your deacon is trustworthy and can provide an account of every penny received. It is important to demonstrate that these offerings are being used for good works, such as helping widows and orphans within the church.

If you wish to support anyone laboring for the gospel, consider supporting missionaries. These are the individuals who were supported during the time the New Testament was written; we refer to them as missionaries today, while they were referred to as evangelists in the New Testament. They traveled from place to place to teach the gospel. Ensure that your missionary is teaching the true gospel: that Christ died for our sins according to Scripture, was buried, and rose again on the third day. Jesus' death atones for our sins, and to receive forgiveness, we must repent and be baptized. Be aware that there are missionaries who focus on teaching a different gospel. Do not send offerings to just anyone calling themselves a missionary. Learn about their principal foundational doctrines. Mormon missionaries began an in-home visit by presenting an evangelical-like gospel, then shifted topics and became completely focused on Joseph Smith. There is a Calvinist missionary society that has thousands of missionaries who focus on indoctrinating with TULIP rather than the gospel.

The Gospel and Baptism

To be saved, one must hear the gospel, believe it, turn from their sins, trust God, and be baptized in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Through this process, our sins are forgiven, and we are justified, sanctified, and washed in the name of Jesus and by the power of the Holy Spirit at the time of baptism. If you support a missionary, be sure this is the gospel he is teaching and that it is not merely an introduction to a complex religious system in order to join an institutional church.

New Testament Church Structure and Practices

After baptism, that person should be added to the church. The churches of the New Testament era were house churches, with the only officers being an elder and a deacon. The elder was responsible for guarding against heretics and ensuring that false teachers were not let into the house. The deacon was responsible for collecting offerings and distributing them to widows, orphans, and those in need during times of emergency. The elder and deacon did not keep any of the offerings for themselves. Only deceitful teachers claimed that the offerings were meant for their own use.

The contributions gathered and utilized for charitable purposes were regarded as the fruits of every individual, regardless of the amount they gave. Some enslaved individuals, despite being unable to provide monetary support, were equally considered as bearing fruit.

The early church was straightforward, and what we see in modern institutional churches often resembles a departure from that simplicity. Some individuals may claim to be apostles when, in fact, they are not. Likewise, institutions claim to be churches that are not the church—these are counterfeits.

Discernment and Separation from False Teachings

We are not here to judge or condemn; we will let Jesus sort it all out. There are true children of God within all these institutional churches who are unaware of the truths you have been learning. This is supported by the message "Come out of her, my people," which indicates that God has people inside Babylon. We are not condemning institutional churches or determining who is saved and who is lost. In some cases, both the saved and the lost will grow together until the harvest, at which point the angels will separate them.

If you understand these principles and have received the call to set yourself apart, you should follow Christ and establish a house church. Choose an elder who is skilled in teaching, capable of recognizing heresies, and courageous enough to stand against them. A good shepherd will safeguard the congregation and address anyone spreading false teachings, informing them that they will not be accepted into the house again unless they cease their heretical teachings.

Moreover, appoint a deacon who can distribute offerings on a weekly basis, particularly to those in need within your house church. Encourage every man in your house church to have a job, to refrain from walking disorderly, and to take care of their own family and financial responsibilities.

Financial Responsibility and Protecting Against Heresy

It is essential not to be a burden to the church or to take advantage of offerings intended for those in need. Unfortunately, many institutional churches will not take this step, and they often continue to support pastors from funds intended for orphans and widows. A pastor in that situation should be ashamed for taking money that rightfully belongs to those who are vulnerable.

It is the duty of the elder, who occupies a role similar to that of a pastor, to safeguard the congregation from false teachings. But what should you do if your pastor turns out to be a heretic? Ultimately, you must trust in Christ for guidance, provided you adhere to His commandments. The Bible explicitly tells us not to sit under the teachings of false prophets or listen to their doctrines. We are cautioned to be mindful of their doctrines since even a small portion of leaven can leaven the entire batch of bread.

If you are part of a house church with a faithful elder, you will have someone watching over you to ensure that heresy does not creep in. If not, it becomes your responsibility to adhere to Christ's commandments. He is the Good Shepherd, and we should follow Him. We cannot make excuses for following a false prophet instead of Christ, regardless of how convinced we may be toward a pastor's sermons.

If you are attending an institutional church where the pastor may be preaching heretical teachings, you have only yourself to blame for staying. No one is forcing you to attend that church; it is a choice you make willingly. Your attendance is not for God's sake; He commanded us not to listen to false prophets.

What if your pastor is faithful in his teachings but is living off the funds meant for widows and orphans? Even if his sermons are solid, if he is not supporting his own family by finding work, he is worse than an unbeliever. This practice resembles the vow of poverty taken by monks or friars. A pastor should not depend on the church funds but should work to provide for his own needs.

Offerings are intended to support widows, orphans, and those facing crises—much like those who were in need during the famine in Jerusalem. If you are giving your money to wealthy individuals instead of the needy, you are going against Christ's commandment to give to the poor. Scripture is clear: your contributions should not go to wealthy men but should instead help those in need.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Good Works in First Century House Churches

By David Michael Curtis

"Good Works in First-Century House Churches" by David Michael Curtis examines the practices of early Christian house churches and contrasts them with modern institutional churches, particularly in terms of financial offerings and community support.

Here's a breakdown of the key points from the document:

- **Early House Church Structure:** The document describes how early Christians gathered in homes for worship, shared meals (known as love feasts), read scripture, prayed, and made collective offerings. These offerings were used to support individuals in need within the community, including widows, orphans, and those facing hardship. There was a strong emphasis on mutual support and ensuring no one lacked necessities.
- **Financial Contributions:** Offerings were made based on each person's ability. Those with less gave modestly, while those with more helped cover shortfalls. These collected funds were used for acts of kindness and good works within the community. This is contrasted with the Old Testament practice of tithing, which the author argues was a tax specific to the Levitical priesthood and not applicable to modern Christians.
- **Community Support:** Early house churches operated as close-knit communities where members supported one another in times of need. This included providing for those who were sick, imprisoned, or otherwise unable to provide for themselves. The document emphasizes the love and support within these early communities.
- **Critique of Modern Institutional Churches:** David Michael Curtis critiques modern churches for often prioritizing building projects, mortgages, and staff salaries over serving the poor and the needy. He argues that offerings should primarily be used for charitable purposes and to support those in need rather than funding infrastructure or administrative costs.
- **Emphasis on Good Works:** The document emphasizes that the purpose of offerings in the early church was to perform good works, such as caring for widows, orphans, and the homeless. It contrasts this with modern churches that may focus more on maintaining buildings and programs.
- **House Churches as an Ideal:** The author advocates for a return to the house church model, where communities are more closely knit, and resources are directly utilized to support

those in need. He suggests that this model aligns more closely with Christ's teachings on caring for the poor and the needy.

- **Paul's Example:** The document references Paul's example of working to support himself and encouraging others to do the same. It also mentions instances where Paul received support from certain churches while others neglected him in times of need.
- **False Prophets and Greed:** The author warns against greed and false prophets who preach for personal financial gain. He suggests that churches focused on maintaining buildings and paying large salaries may be neglecting their true purpose of serving the needy.

In essence, the document advocates for the idea that Christian communities should prioritize assisting those in need and that the house church model is a more effective means of achieving this than modern institutional churches.

Dear friends,

The Importance of Good Works and House Churches

In today's letter, we will discuss the importance of good works. I want to begin by emphasizing that if you are not part of a house church and are living on a low income, you are at a disadvantage when it comes to participating in good works.

The Ideal Structure of a House Church

Let me describe how things should ideally be within a house church. Believers gather together to break bread, remembering that Christ died for their sins, as recorded in Scripture. They edify and encourage one another, visit and converse, take turns reading Scripture, pray together, sing, and then share a meal, often referred to as the love feast.

Financial Contributions and Collective Good Works

Everyone who attends the house church contributes an offering, as the Lord had prospered them. Those on low incomes can give modestly, like the widow who could only afford to contribute two mites, while others who are wealthier can help cover any shortfall. Together, the collective funds gathered from everyone in the house church are used to perform acts of kindness and good works.

Biblical Examples of Collective Offerings

This practice is illustrated in the Bible, where Paul collected offerings during a famine in Jerusalem to help the church that was suffering from the crisis. This collection took place on the first day of the week when everyone would set aside an offering as God had prospered them. When they gathered together in a house, they would present their offerings, which were always used for good works, ensuring that no one faced lack and everyone had what they needed.

Community Support and Love in Early House Churches

In a functioning house church, individuals didn't have to worry about emergencies or crises. The house church community supported one another, ensuring that no one went hungry or faced difficulties alone. Jesus said, "You will know them by their love for one another," and that love was evident in the house churches that the apostles started.

Diversity and Equality in Early Church Gatherings

These gatherings were diverse, consisting of both poor and wealthy individuals, but it didn't matter who was who. Everyone gave according to their means, which meant no one lacked anything. When there was an abundance, that surplus was used to help other house churches in need due to troubles like famine.

Contrasting Modern Institutional Church Practices

In contrast, modern practices in institutional churches often leave individuals to fend for themselves. Each person is responsible for facing their crises. If you are wealthy, the focus may shift to accumulating more possessions or saving for retirement while still managing your challenges alone.

Early Church Community and Support for the Needy

In the early church, however, everyone was part of a community—a family where no one lacked what they needed. Many early church members were slaves who had no income, and their masters often failed to provide for even their basic needs. Jesus taught that if you have two shirts, you should give one to someone who has none, illustrating the necessity of supporting one another. Wealthy Christians in the early church would help their fellow believers, including slave Christians, fulfill their needs through community offerings collected on the first day of the week in the house church.

Collective Contribution and Recognition in House Churches

The good deeds of the house church were attributed to all its members, which meant that everyone, regardless of their income, was seen as contributing to the work of good. The church functioned as a single community—a body of believers where everyone was recognized for their collective good works.

The Purpose of Weekly Offerings in Early Churches

The weekly offerings collected were primarily used to support widows who had lost their husbands and had no earthly support, as well as orphans—the fatherless children who lacked anyone to care for them. The primary purpose of the weekly offering in the house church was to take place on the first day of the week. It aimed to care for widows, orphans, and anyone within the church who had needs.

Paul's Example and Encouragement to Work and Provide

Paul set an example by working to earn his living and consistently encouraged the men in the house churches to follow his lead. He advised them to work and provide for themselves, urging even those who had previously been involved in theft to find employment so that they could contribute to others.

Contrasting Modern Church Spending Practices

In contrast, let's examine current practices in institutional churches. For instance, Calvary Baptist Church in Arcadia, FL, recently sold a large plot of land to the Wawa Gas Company, which constructed a gas station on Highway 70. The church used the money from this sale to construct a large parking lot and new buildings, which are currently under construction. This is where the weekly offerings are being directed—towards parking lots, buildings, and church programs.

Wealth, Offerings, and Neglect of the Needy

In another case, a Baptist family here owns the largest house in DeSoto County, along with a significant amount of land. Their wealth was given to them through offerings made to a local, independent Baptist Church. These offerings are directed towards paying off the church mortgage, meeting legally required insurance, funding various church programs, covering utility bills, and supporting the pastor and his family, allowing them to live in luxury. They purchased the land about three years ago and have since built a massive home.

The Reality of Homelessness and Neglect

Meanwhile, there are homeless people in Arcadia who are being neglected. They are living in dirty clothes and lack even necessities, such as water. One homeless man told me, "If you have water, you have everything. If you have no water, you have nothing." He truly understands the hardship of going without essential resources. Yet, the affluent Baptist family continues to live in complete comfort, largely supported by offerings collected at the church.

Tithing: Old Testament vs. New Testament

Many churches teach that one must tithe. But is tithing biblical? It depends on whether you reference the Old Testament or the New Testament. In the Old Testament, Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek after the War of the Kings as a form of tax. After the Mount Sinai Covenant was established, the twelve tribes of Israel were given land. At the same time, the Levites were set apart for service in the sanctuary and did not receive an inheritance of land. The other tribes were required to pay a tithe—10% of their harvest—to support the Levitical priests.

Tithing in the Modern Context

Since 70 AD, there has been no temple in Jerusalem, no Levitical priests, and no tribe of Levi to whom one can pay a tithe. The tithe served as a tax intended to fund the Levitical priests. The absence of Levitical priests indicates that no tax is owed to them. Furthermore, only Israelites were obligated to pay the temple tax.

Free Offerings vs. Tithing in Early Christianity

A minister is not a Levite priest—we are not one of the tribes of Israel. Therefore, we are not required to give a tithe of our income to them. This practice was part of the old covenant. In modern times, since the founding of the church, Christians have continued to gather in homes for worship. Instead of a tithe, they gave free offerings. These offerings were not used to buy land, build parking lots, pay for cathedral mortgages, or cover insurance costs. Instead, they were used to support widows, orphans, and slaves who had no income. The money helped with good works, providing food, clothing, and essentials for those in prison.

Support for Imprisoned Believers in Early Christianity

In the first century, if someone was imprisoned, the prison did not provide for their daily needs. If friends or family did not supply food, the prisoner would go hungry. The Roman government offered no food to those incarcerated. The Apostle Paul often found himself in prison, and of all the churches he founded, the only one that sent him an offering to help feed him was the Philippian church. The others refused to help him. In one of his letters, Paul mentioned needing a coat that he had left behind at one of the house churches, highlighting that he was cold in prison. Likewise, William Tyndale, in the 16th century, wrote from prison that he was in need of a coat and was constantly cold. The church in Corinth—a wealthy congregation—neglected to visit Paul or send money for food or even a coat. The Philippians, however, came to his aid by sending someone with money to help him.

The True Purpose of Offerings

This is what offerings were meant for: to do good deeds, not to build parking lots, buildings, or luxurious houses for ministers. If you are not part of a house church and are living in a low-income situation, you may feel limited in your ability to do good work. I can relate to this struggle. I want to contribute positively, but I have to find creative ways to do so because I lack a community of others to share in funding good deeds.

Modern Church Buildings and Neglect of the Poor

Here in Arcadia, countless church buildings sit mostly empty every Sunday. Some may gather a dozen people at most, and they do give offerings—perhaps they consider these to be tithes. However, that money is typically used to pay mortgage loans, cover insurance, and replace roofs, leaving the church largely inactive in its support of the poor in DeSoto County. Imagine if all of these church buildings were sold and the proceeds were used to help the poor in our community. There would be sufficient funds to provide housing for every homeless person in this area. Which do you think aligns more with Christ's teachings: giving to support a building or using offerings to help widows, orphans, and the homeless?

Complicity in False Doctrine and Church Buildings

If you are attending an institutional church and giving your offerings, believing they are tithes, but the minister is delivering flawed teachings, you become complicit in that false doctrine. If he is teaching another gospel or promoting another Jesus, and you support him financially, you share in his errors. Contributing money to support a church building—what some refer to as the House of God—is rooted in an Old Testament concept. The House of God was the temple in Jerusalem, and a tax was collected specifically for it. A church building today is not the House of God. You can gather with others in your home. There is no need for a large building, a bank loan, special insurance, or parking lots.

Financial Resources and Supporting Ministry

It's important to evaluate how we allocate our financial resources within the church. While we shouldn't feel pressured to give excessive amounts of money to a pastor so he can purchase a large piece of land and build an extravagant house for his family, we also need to recognize the significance of supporting the ministry. After all, a laborer is worthy of his hire.

The Proper Use of Church Funds

However, the funds contributed shouldn't primarily enrich a 'pastor.' Instead, they should facilitate the spread of the gospel through the work of evangelists. Those who traveled received financial support, while elders who were stationary in the same city did not receive large sums of money. It's essential to note that the terms 'elder,' 'bishop,' and 'pastor' refer to the same office.

The elder, bishop, or pastor was required to work and make an income just like any other church member. The donations were not meant to provide the pastor with a salary or help with his home loan. It was anticipated that the pastor would be employed and support himself, just as all other members did.

Contributions were intended to assist traveling evangelists or those who had been imprisoned. However, anyone residing in a particular town and attending a single church was expected to be employed and provide for themselves. The donations were intended for widows and orphaned children, not for men who were capable of working and supporting themselves, like a pastor.

The Original Purpose of Offerings

In certain denominations, such as Eastern Orthodoxy and Roman Catholicism, bishops often reside in mansions or palaces. However, that is not the purpose for which offerings were intended. Offerings were intended to support essential needs—helping widows, orphans, and those lacking necessities such as clothing and food. Jesus specifically taught us to visit the sick and those in prison and to provide for them.

Collective Fruit Bearing Through Good Works

The purpose of the offerings was to do good works. In early house churches, regardless of a person's financial status—whether they were slaves or wealthy contributors—everyone was considered to be bearing fruit in God's eyes. Paul wrote to one house church, encouraging them to assist him during his imprisonment, stating that this would allow them to bear fruit.

Communal Support and Self-Sufficiency

When offerings are utilized to support people in need—such as widows, orphans, and people experiencing homelessness—that is truly bearing fruit. This was a communal effort, taking place on the first day of the week when the church would gather in a home to collect offerings. These offerings were intended to ensure that no one went without, especially in times of emergency. The church was self-sufficient, providing for its members without relying on the Roman government for

support. There was no social safety net. If the church did not support widows, they would go hungry.

Modern Churches and Neglect of Community Needs

In contrast, many modern churches often collect tithes and offerings that primarily serve to maintain buildings, pay off mortgages, or fund church programs. Meanwhile, the poor and needy in the community are overlooked. The church building may be thriving, but the homeless are still going hungry and lack basic resources like water and shelter. It's a troubling reality that while we dress in our best clothes and attend beautiful church buildings, we might be neglecting those in real need, much like the church in Corinth ignored Paul while he was imprisoned.

Independent Churches and Potential for Greed

Many evangelical churches are independent and do not report to a larger governing body. This autonomy means that all incoming contributions remain within that local church. If a minister operates in an independent church with a modest congregation, they may benefit significantly from the tithes collected.

Signs of False Prophets and Proper Use of Church Funds

One sign of a false prophet is the motivation of greed—preaching for selfish financial gain. Suppose an institutional church does not share its resources beyond its walls and is solely focused on maintaining its physical structure, paying for insurance, and covering the salaries of its pastors. In that case, it can lead to a pastor and their family living comfortably, potentially even owning the largest house in the county. The Port Charlotte Independent Baptist church has only a couple hundred families attending, and their collective tithe has helped its minister essentially build a mansion for his family.

Advocating for House Churches and Collective Good Works

I suggest that we meet in houses and collect offerings, using those offerings to perform good works. The good deeds carried out by the house church should be ascribed to everyone in the group, whether they contributed just two mites, like the widow at the temple, or thousands of dollars. In heaven's eyes, everyone is considered to be producing good fruit by doing good, loving one another, visiting the sick, visiting those in prison, and caring for one another.

The Benefits of House Church Community

Imagine having a house church where you didn't need a retirement fund. When the time came, and you were no longer able to work, your house church would ensure all your needs were met. Picture having 30 or 35 people gathering in a home each week. For years, you supported the poor within your house church, and then, when you grew older and could no longer work, your house church would be there for you, taking care of your needs.

Living Without Worry in a House Church

What if you could live out the teachings of Jesus Christ without worrying about tomorrow? What if you didn't need to store up treasures on Earth for retirement? Instead of building bigger barns to hoard wealth for retirement, you could truly follow Christ's teachings, trusting that you wouldn't need to accumulate material wealth.

The House Church as the Ideal Model

I propose that the only way to fulfill Christ's commandments regarding money is through a house church. In an institutional church, it is every man for himself. The poor and the wealthy are left to fend for themselves; they are told they need bigger barns and to invest in the stock market for retirement.

Practical Application of House Church Principles

Let me explain how this works:

First, we follow Christ's commandment to sell all that we have and give it to the poor. Yes, this commandment is to be taken seriously, just as the early church did. Next, Paul taught that every man in the house church should have a job and take care of his household, as well as his widows. He stated that anyone who does not work should not eat. If a member of the house church refuses to work, the church should let him go hungry to encourage him to find a job.

Roles and Responsibilities in the House Church

Thus, every man is expected to have a job to support his family, including extended family members such as widows. Once he is supported, he should give offerings to the church in accordance with how God has prospered him. Some may prosper and be able to give more, while others, such as slaves with no income, may not be able to contribute financially. However, the house church would still meet the needs of those individuals so they would not go hungry; they might be working, but they weren't getting paid for their labor.

Common Sense and Community Living in Early Churches

The early church employed common sense—every person was to work, take care of their family, and live in their own home. They met from house to house, indicating that even those who had sold their houses and lands still had a place to live. They were not practicing communal living; everyone owned their own houses and had their jobs. When they gathered in a house, they were the church. The term "church" refers to the group of people who assemble, not the building itself.

The Purpose of Abundance in House Church Gatherings

As God prospered them, the abundance collected each week during the house church meetings was used for good works, with a priority on supporting widows and orphans.

Contrast modern giving practices: instead of using offerings exclusively for people with low incomes to do good works, the collected money is deposited into the minister's bank account, which in some cases may already contain millions of dollars.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Church, Forgives

Who can forgive sins but God only?

Mark 2:7 Why doth this *man* thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you

Ephesians 4:32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

Christ forgave you

Colossians 3:13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also *do* ye.

Come boldly unto the throne of grace

Hebrews 4:16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD

Psalms 32:5 I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin

Psalms 32:5 I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

Forgive all my sin

Psalms 25:18 Look upon mine affliction and my pain; and forgive all my sins.

Cleanse me from my sin

Psalms 51:2 Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin.

Against thee, thee only, have I sinned

Psalm 51:4 Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done *this* evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, *and* be clear when thou judgest.

Hear from heaven; and when thou hearest, forgive

2 Chronicles 6:21 Hearken therefore unto the supplications of thy servant, and of thy people Israel, which they shall make toward this place: hear thou from thy dwelling place, *even* from heaven; and when thou hearest, forgive.

Then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin

2 Chronicles 7:14 If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

Psalm 86:5 For thou, Lord, *art* good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.

Psalm 103:2-3 Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases;

Church, Salvation Through

Whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord

Romans 10:13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life

John 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

He that believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life

John 5:24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

He that believeth on me hath everlasting life

John 6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

Whosoever believeth in him should have everlasting life

John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

He that believeth on him is not condemned

John 3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

Every one which believeth on him, may have everlasting life

John 6:40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

If thou shalt confess, and shalt believe, thou shalt be saved

Romans 10:9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

With the mouth confession is made unto salvation

Romans 10:10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

As many as received him

John 1:12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

Whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins

Acts 10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

The gospel of Christ is salvation to every one that believeth

Romans 1:16 ¶ For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

Salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus

2 Timothy 3:15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved

Acts 16:31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

Luke 23:42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

Luke 23:43 And Jesus said unto him, *Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.*

The gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ

Romans 6:23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

That we might live through him

1 John 4:9 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

We shall be saved from wrath through him

Romans 5:9 Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

By the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth

Acts 4:10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, *even* by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

There is none other name whereby we must be saved

Acts 4:12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

Laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men

Mark 7:8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.*

1 John 3:23 ¶ And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

Church: One Universal Catholic.

By David Michael Curtis

The document "One Universal Catholic Church" by David Michael Curtis discusses the concept of the "Catholic" or "universal" church. Here's a summary:

- **Claims of Exclusivity:** Many institutional churches claim to be the only true church, such as Roman Catholicism, Eastern Orthodoxy, Seventh-day Adventists, Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses, and others. The author notes various groups with similar exclusive claims.
- **Author's Identity:** The author identifies as "Catholic" but not Roman Catholic and "Orthodox" but not Eastern Orthodox. They define "catholic" as meaning "universal."
- **Core Beliefs:** The author refers to a separate document listing 40 orthodox beliefs, which they believe most Christians would agree with.
- **Critique of Institutional Churches:** The author critiques institutional churches for deviating from the original foundation established by Jesus, calling for a return to that foundation.
- **Foundation of Faith:** The author defines the foundation of faith as turning from sin, trusting God, undergoing water baptism, receiving forgiveness of sins, and receiving the Holy Spirit.
- **Beliefs:** The author believes in resurrection, Jesus' return, and eternal judgment.
- **First-Century Understanding of "Catholic":** The author states that first-century Christians used "Catholic" to mean universal, including various house churches.
- **Universal Perspective:** The author adopts a universal perspective on Christianity, including various denominations, while acknowledging flaws in leadership and doctrines.
- **God's People Within Churches:** The author believes God has people within various institutional churches and does not hold an exclusive stance.
- **Parable of the Wheat and Tares:** The author uses the parable of the wheat and tares to explain that both exist within churches, and judgment is left to God.
- **Origins of Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy:** The author considers Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy relatively recent compared to the original foundation.
- **Simplicity of Original Foundation:** The author emphasizes the simplicity of the original foundation compared to the complexity of modern religious systems.
- **Conclusion:** The author identifies as an "Orthodox Catholic Christian" but is neither Roman Catholic nor Eastern Orthodox.

There is one universal church, often referred to as the Catholic Orthodox Church. However, many different institutional churches claim that title. Roman Catholicism asserts that it is the one true church, while Eastern Orthodoxy makes a similar claim. The Seventh-day Adventists consider themselves the remnant church, the last-day church, and the Mormons refer to themselves as the Latter-day Saints of Jesus Christ, stating that they are the only true church. Jehovah's Witnesses also believe they are the only true followers of Jehovah.

Claims of Exclusivity Among Certain Groups.

In our town, there is a group called the Yellow Deli, whose origins trace back to the 1970s, and they believe they are the only Christians on Earth. Similarly, the Churches of Christ maintain that they are the only real church, insisting that salvation requires water baptism and membership in their church. This isn't an exhaustive list; for instance, there is a church in the Philippines that claims to be the only true church and has an apostle at its head. It seems that, according to them, the gospel is only reaching people who speak Tagalog rather than going to every nation and tongue.

There are also groups in Africa that believe they are the only Christians on Earth. I think you understand the point I'm making.

My Identity as a Catholic, But Not Roman Catholic.

I am Catholic. Did that surprise you? That's right, I identify as Catholic, but I am not Roman Catholic; I am Orthodox, though not Eastern Orthodox. The term "catholic" means universal. Therefore, the claim that Roman Catholicism is the exclusive one true church is contradictory. "Catholic" means universal, not exclusive. The term "Orthodox" refers to my adherence to Orthodox doctrines, but that doesn't mean I am Eastern Orthodox.

My Core Beliefs.

I have a PDF on my Google Drive titled "Beliefs," where I list 40 orthodox beliefs. There is nothing strange about them, and most Christians would not find fault with any of the 40 items on the list.

Critique of Institutional Churches and the Original Foundation.

While I acknowledge that we may disagree on certain points, my list of 40 beliefs would likely be recognized by the majority of Christians. When I critique various institutional churches, I examine the foundation that Jesus established and compare it to these churches. My criticism is based on the observation that they have deviated from that foundation. I am calling for a return to that original foundation.

The Foundation of Faith.

I'm examining the foundation of faith and comparing it to institutional churches. This foundation involves turning from sin, trusting God, and undergoing water baptism. Through this, we receive forgiveness of sins and the gift of the Holy Spirit, enabling us to bear fruit. That's my core message.

Beliefs in Resurrection and Eternal Judgment.

I believe in the resurrection and that Jesus is returning to call the saints out of the grave. I also believe in eternal judgment, where everyone will either be eternally saved with eternal life or eternally damned with punishment that cannot be reversed. There is no appeal.

The Importance of a Solid Foundation.

Once you grasp this foundation and establish it, remaining steadfast no matter what others say, you can then compare the teachings of various institutional churches. Often, their focus diverges significantly from this foundation. They may use Christian terminology like grace, faith, Jesus, forgiveness, and the cross. Still, once you truly understand and solidify that foundation, you won't be easily swayed or led astray to build upon sand.

The First-Century Understanding of "Catholic."

What you're observing in my letters on Google Drive is my commitment to staying on that foundation, regardless of what people say. The first-century Christians referred to themselves as "Catholic," which means universal. The Apostle Paul defines "universal" in 1 Corinthians 1-3 as including house churches started by Apollos, Paul, and Peter. The Roman Catholic Church claims that the only true church originates from Peter, which is an exclusive viewpoint and contradicts Paul's definition in 1 Corinthians 1-3.

My Universal Perspective on Christianity.

The term "Catholic," meaning universal, encompasses all house churches established by Apollos, Paul, and Peter. I identify as Catholic in this sense, viewing Christianity as universal, which includes Lutherans, Methodists, Baptists, and Presbyterians. While I acknowledge that the leaders in these denominations may be flawed and some of their conclusions may need reconsideration, I do not hold an exclusive stance. Instead, I adopt a Catholic, or universal, perspective.

Belief in God's People Within Institutional Churches.

I believe that God has people within these institutional churches, and we may be surprised at which of these churches contain His people. I am not exclusive; I include individuals from all these churches. However, I do not assert that only one institutional church is saved, nor do I believe that everyone in a specific institutional church is saved. The idea that all members of the Roman Catholic Church, or any other denomination like the Church of Christ or Jehovah's Witnesses, are saved contradicts Scripture.

The Parable of the Wheat and Tares.

Both wheat and tares grow together until the harvest. This is why I refrain from taking an exclusive interpretation of the church. No single church will be wholly saved, nor will any be entirely excluded. Instead, I believe in the universal church, acknowledging that there may be examples of wheat among institutional churches, as well as many others. I can't distinguish which is which, and it's not my role to do so. Ultimately, the angels will separate the wheat from the tares at the harvest, and I am content to leave that judgment to them. I focus on judging doctrines, not the individuals who believe in those doctrines. I stand by my belief in the Catholic, or universal, church, which is invisible.

The Relatively Recent Origins of Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy.

You can't truly distinguish who is a Christian and who is not. Both Roman Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy are considered ancient from our perspective. However, from God's perspective, these two traditions are less than two days old. In such a short time, they have already strayed from the foundation laid by Christ and the Apostles.

The Simplicity of the Original Foundation.

This foundation includes turning from sin, trusting in God's grace, being baptized in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit to receive forgiveness of sins, and receiving the Holy Spirit, which enables us to bear fruit. It's that simple.

The Complexity of Modern Religious Systems.

These complex religious systems have replaced this simplicity with complexity. In the early church, most Christians in the first centuries identified as either Catholic or Orthodox, which distinguished them from heretics and divergent movements.

Conclusion: My Identity as an Orthodox Catholic Christian.

So today, I identify as an Orthodox Catholic Christian, but I am neither Roman Catholic nor Eastern Orthodox.

Confessing Sins to a Priest

I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD

Psalms 32:5 I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

Whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins

Acts 10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

I acknowledge my transgressions

Psalms 51:2-3 Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.

Enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus

Hebrews 10:19 ¶ Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,

Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money

Acts 8:18-22 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, **Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.** Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

Who can forgive sins but God only?

Mark 2:7 Why doth this *man* thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus

1 Timothy 2:5 For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

There is forgiveness with thee

Psalms 130:1-4 ¶ A Song of degrees. Out of the depths have I cried unto thee, O LORD. Lord, hear my voice: let thine ears be attentive to the voice of my supplications. If thou, LORD, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand? But *there is* forgiveness with thee, that thou mayest be feared.

See Also: [*Church, Forgives*](#)

Confess Your Faults One to Another

By David Michael Curtis

Dear Friends,

This topic is clearly presented in scripture and requires no commentary. A concise topical Bible study that includes all verses regarding confessing our faults to each other is sufficient. **The phrase "confess your faults one to another" does not refer to the Roman Catholic practice of confessing sins to a priest.** Rather, *it pertains to the act of admitting our wrongdoings to one another, forgiving each other, and praying for one another.* Review the following relevant verses related to today's topic and see for yourself.

Confession and Prayer.

James 5:16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

Daily Needs and Forgiveness.

Matthew 6:11-12 Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

The Importance of Forgiving Others.

Matthew 6:14-15 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Dealing with a Brother's Trespass.

Matthew 18:15-17 Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

The Extent of Forgiveness.

Matthew 18:21-22 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

Forgiveness in Prayer.

Mark 11:25-26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

Managing Anger.

Ephesians 4:26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:

Putting Away Negative Emotions and Being Forgiving.

Ephesians 4:31-32 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

Forbearing and Forgiving One Another.

Colossians 3:13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

The Importance of Prayer Without Wrath or Doubt.

1 Timothy 2:8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

The Trespass Offering and Christ's Sacrifice.

The Levitical priests performed various types of sacrifices on the Altar of Burnt Sacrifice in the temple in Jerusalem. One of these sacrifices was the Trespass Offering, which was made when a person committed a wrongdoing against their neighbor. Christ's sacrifice on the Cross replaced all the different types of sacrifices performed on the Altar of Burnt Sacrifice by the Levitical priests. Christ paid for all the trespasses we have committed against one another, which is why that debt is considered paid in full. This is also the reason we are commanded to forgive one another: "Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors."

Christ's Teaching on Reconciliation Before Offering.

Christ taught: Matthew 5:23-26 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

The Expectation of Repayment and Reconciliation.

Christ's teaching in this passage relates to the worldly debts we incur during our lives. Being a Christian does not exempt us from facing the consequences of accumulating debt or breaking the law. Christ taught that we will reap what we sow. This means that, despite being forgiven by God, there may still be earthly consequences for accumulating debt or breaking the law. If we steal, we should not expect God to deliver us from prison; instead, we should anticipate serving the full sentence given by the judge. When someone to whom you owe a debt demands repayment, Christians are expected to settle that debt before making offerings at the altar, which, under the new covenant, means holding off on offerings, even for charitable deeds, until the debt is cleared. After the debt is settled, you may continue with your contributions. If your opponent requests repayment and won't pardon your debt, they will not receive forgiveness from our Father in Heaven.

Turn not Thou Away.

Matthew 5:42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee **turn not thou away.**

Ask Them Not Again.

Luke 6:30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods **ask *them* not again.**

Lend, Hoping for Nothing Again.

Luke 6:35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and **lend, hoping for nothing again;** and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Confession to a Priest vs. Confessing to God.

By David Michael Curtis

The file "Confession to a Priest vs. Confessing to God" by David Michael Curtis discusses the difference between confessing sins to a priest and confessing directly to God.

Here's a summary of the key points:

- **Jesus' Teachings:** The document emphasizes Jesus Christ's simple teachings, particularly from Matthew 6, where he instructs followers to pray in private, in their "closet," and to ask God for forgiveness. It highlights the simplicity and efficiency of Jesus' teachings.
- **Private Prayer and Forgiveness:** The document stresses the importance of private prayer and confession directly to God, as described in Matthew 6 and the parable of the tax collector in Luke 18. It asserts that private confession is sufficient for obtaining forgiveness from God.
- **Critique of Confession to a Priest:** The document criticizes the Roman Catholic practice of confessing sins to a priest in a confessional. It argues that this practice contradicts Jesus' teachings on private prayer and forgiveness. It raises concerns about the detailed nature of confessions, especially regarding sexual thoughts and actions, and the potential for abuse.
- **Concerns about Sexual Abuse:** The document expresses strong concerns about the history of sexual abuse within the Roman Catholic Church, linking it to the practice of confession. It cites reports of abuse cases and suggests that the celibacy of priests, combined with the detailed confessions of young people, may contribute to the problem.
- **Emphasis on Direct Confession to God:** The document reiterates that God is all-knowing and capable of hearing and forgiving sins directly. It suggests that a simple, heartfelt confession to God is sufficient for forgiveness.
- **Water Baptism and Forgiveness:** The document also briefly mentions water baptism as a means of receiving forgiveness of sins and the gift of the Holy Spirit.
- **Warning Against False Teachers:** The document warns against false teachers who distort the Gospel and downplay the importance of good works and obedience to Christ's commandments.
- **Personal Testimony and Research:** The document mentions sources such as Charles Chiniquy, a former Roman Catholic priest, and Sister Charlotte, who shared their experiences related to the Roman Catholic Church.

Dear Friends,

The topic of confessing sins to a priest versus confessing directly to God is quite significant. I am truly grateful for Jesus Christ's teachings. It is possible to review every commandment and teaching of Christ, along with all of his sermons, throughout the four gospels in less than two hours. Some readers may even accomplish this in just 90 minutes. This efficiency is what makes his teachings so remarkable.

The Devil's Deception.

The devil and his ministers, who can masquerade as ministers of righteousness, with all their lawyers and scribes—who have had 2,000 years to perfect their craft—have not been able to outsmart Jesus Christ and his simple teachings. Jesus is fully aware of all of Earth's history; nothing that happens here surprises him. In fact, he knows how things could have been different. He mentioned that certain cities would have repented had they witnessed his miracles, indicating his awareness of what could have transpired under different circumstances.

Jesus: The Embodiment of Wisdom.

Jesus embodies wisdom; he is the wisdom of God. Everything he does and says is wise, unproveable, and irrefutable. His teachings withstand scrutiny from skeptics and scoffers, no matter their worldly knowledge or perceived intelligence. Within just 90 minutes to two hours of teachings, he was able to confound all the religions and wise men of his time.

Private Prayer and Forgiveness (Matthew 6).

Matthew 6:5-15 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, **when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret**; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, **use not vain repetitions**, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And **forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors**. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

When thou prayest:

- "Enter into thy closet."
- "Shut thy door."
- "Pray to thy father."
- "In secret."
- "Use not vain repetitions."
- No need for long prayers: "They think that they shall be heard for their much speaking."

Concerning private prayer for forgiveness:

- Keep it simple: "Forgive us our debts as we forgive our debtors."
- "If ye forgive men their trespasses."
- **"Your heavenly Father will also forgive you."**

The Pharisee and the Tax Collector.

Luke 18:13-14 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, **God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified** *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

The tax collector's confession was made directly to God and was simple: He confessed to being a sinner and asked God to be merciful to him. Christ stated, "This man went down to his house justified."

The Roman Catholic practice of confession contradicts the commandments of Christ as presented in Matthew 6.

Instructions for Confession:

- Enter the confessional (not your closet).
- Shut the door.
- Address the priest as "Father," rather than praying directly to God by calling Him Father.
- Confession is made before a man rather than in private prayer, directly to God.
 - **Matthew 23:9** And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.
- When confessing, provide a detailed list of sins. Instead of keeping their requests for forgiveness simple, women and children over the age of 12 are encouraged to be explicit about their lustful thoughts and actions to the priest.
- A priest absolves you of your sins rather than saying, "Your heavenly Father will also forgive you."

- Penance typically involves the repeated recitation of the Lord's Prayer, as found in Matthew 6, which contradicts the commandment against vain repetitions in prayer.
- Penance may also include the repeated recitation of prayers to Mary, which contradicts the commandment not to worship any creature on earth, as prayer is a form of worship.

Christ's commandments about prayer and asking God for forgiveness are straightforward, and the contradictions to them are clear and easy to recognize. Astonishingly, over a billion people on Earth have been led to so thoroughly contradict the simple teachings of Christ found in Matthew 6.

Private Prayer and Forgiveness (Matthew 6).

Today, we are discussing the difference between confessing sin to a priest and confessing to God. In Matthew 6, Jesus instructs us to pray in private. He says to go into your closet and shut the door, where no one can see or hear you. In this private space, we should pray, asking God to "forgive us our debts as we forgive those who are indebted to us." He further explains that if we forgive others, we will be forgiven, but if we do not forgive others, our Father in Heaven will not forgive us either.

Jesus' Instruction on Private Confession.

In just a few short sentences, Jesus outlined that our confession of sins and requests for forgiveness should take place privately, where only God can hear us. He assures us that God will reward us openly for our sincerity and faithfulness.

The Necessity of Forgiveness.

While we pray in our private space, we should ask God for forgiveness and express that we have forgiven those who are indebted to us. It's important to note that, according to Jesus in Matthew chapter 6 during the Sermon on the Mount, anyone who does not forgive others will not be forgiven by their Father in Heaven.

Private Confession is Sufficient.

Confession of sin and asking for forgiveness in our private moments is sufficient; that is all God requires. Christians can obtain forgiveness for their sins and confess privately to God without the need for a Roman Catholic priest present. God is perfectly capable of hearing our confessions on His own—He does not need assistance from any priest. God is almighty, all-powerful, all-knowing, and ever-present, as the Scriptures tell us. Therefore, when we go into our closet, shut the door, and pray for forgiveness, God is there, listening to our confessions and granting us forgiveness.

Jesus' Ministry and Forgiveness of Sins.

Next, I want to highlight the ministry of Jesus, as recorded by eyewitnesses in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John. It was Jesus' custom to approach those who were sick, diseased, or paralyzed, and He often began by saying, "Son, do not be afraid. Be of good cheer. Your sins are forgiven." This

encapsulates the Gospel of Jesus Christ. The very first thing He said to many was about the forgiveness of their sins. If they believed their sins were forgiven, He would tell them to get up and walk. If they trusted in His authority, they got up and walked—it was that simple.

The Gospel of Jesus Christ.

This outlines the Gospel: first, we hear the good news that Jesus stood trial under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died, and resurrected, all fulfilling the Scriptures given by Moses and the prophets, proving that Jesus is the Son of God. His death, burial, and resurrection atoned for our sins. If we believe the Gospel, we must respond with repentance and water baptism in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

The Promise of Water Baptism.

At water baptism, we are promised two gifts: the forgiveness of sins and the gift of the Holy Spirit. Both forgiveness and the Holy Spirit are gifts that provide salvation. If you receive forgiveness and the Holy Spirit, you are saved.

Salvation Through Faith and the Holy Spirit.

Through water baptism, we are born of water and the Spirit by faith, not by the works of the law of Moses. Water baptism is not one of the works of the law of Moses—the Book of Moses does not command it. Instead, Christ and the apostles commanded it, making it a New Testament commandment.

Addressing False Teachings on Works and Faith.

Therefore, false teachers who wrongly categorize water baptism as a work and cite the Apostle Paul stating that works do not save us are distorting the Gospel. We are saved by grace through faith, and our faith ought to produce good works and obedience to the teachings of Jesus Christ. It's really not difficult to understand; it's quite simple.

The Importance of Good Works and Obedience.

Any false teacher who claims that grace and faith do not lead to good works and ignores Christ's commandments is clearly a false prophet. Such individuals should be ignored and avoided, and their teachings should be discarded entirely.

The Practice of Confessing Sins to a Priest.

Let's discuss the practice of confessing sins to a priest. This topic may be controversial, especially if you are unaware that it has been happening for centuries and is still ongoing in your city, particularly within the Roman Catholic Church, every day of the week. Starting at the age of 12, boys and girls are required by Catholicism to enter a confessional and make a thorough confession.

A "good confession" involves disclosing not only their actions and words but also their thoughts and imaginations to the priest. The priest is trained to ask probing questions to elicit as much detail as possible during the confession, all aimed at assisting faithful Roman Catholics in having their sins forgiven or, more accurately, absolved through the penance that follows. This means that boys and girls who are beginning to experience puberty at this age undergo this process.

Concerns Regarding Celibate Priests and Young Confessors.

They are beginning to experience hormonal changes and develop attraction to the opposite sex. This is perfectly normal, and there is nothing sinful about puberty. However, a Roman Catholic priest, who is expected to practice celibacy and has no sexual outlet for his desires, is trained to sit and listen to the budding imaginations of young children who are going through puberty.

The Tragic Reality of Sexual Abuse.

It is not strange seeing the results that these celibate priests become sexually attracted to these little boys and these little girls and molest them. This issue has been ongoing for over a thousand years, as documented by the news. In the last 20 years alone, the country of France has reported over 200,000 cases of sexual abuse. Over the past 70 years, numerous countries around the world have Roman Catholic churches that have confessionals. If France alone has at least 200,000 cases of sexual abuse—many of which have only recently come to light—there could potentially be many more cases that remain undiscovered.

The Scale of the Abuse Crisis.

What if all incidents of sexual abuse in hundreds of countries were reported in the news? Imagine being given a total number of sexual abuse cases that have occurred around the world over the last 50 to 70 years. How many millions of cases would they report to us during the nightly news? And this figure would only reflect the last five to seven decades.

Historical and Global Scope of the Abuse.

What if we knew the true extent of sexual abuse cases within the Roman Catholic Church involving priests and nuns throughout history? The number could be frightening, potentially reaching tens of millions, if not hundreds of millions, of little boys, girls, and women who these supposedly celibate priests have abused. Are you offended? So am I.

I didn't create this situation; I'm just reporting it to you. There are numerous reports available on YouTube. All you have to do is search for "sexual abuse Roman Catholic Church," and you will find hundreds of videos produced not by amateur YouTubers but by official news outlets. In fact, these reports indicate there have been over 200,000, possibly even over 300,000, cases in just France alone within the last 70 years.

The Question of Celibacy and Temptation.

Is it strange that this is happening? A priest who is supposed to be celibate has no sexual outlet and yet is expected to listen to one child after another as they go through puberty, confessing their sexual fantasies. Not only are they meant to listen, but they are also supposed to ask probing questions to encourage the children to make a thorough confession detailing their sexual thoughts.

Personal Testimony and Research.

You might be wondering where I learned all of this. I've never gone to confession or confessed my sins to a priest, nor have I observed these interactions firsthand. My knowledge comes from reading books. One notable source is Charles Chiniquy, a former Roman Catholic priest who served for over 50 years. He authored two books: *50 Years in the Church of Rome* and *The Priest, the Woman, & the Confessional*. Abraham Lincoln was his lawyer.

The Testimony of Charles Chiniquy.

You are welcome to read these two books, and I encourage you to do so. Additionally, you might want to check out YouTube for testimony by Sister Charlotte, where she shares her experiences of being in a convent and what it was like to be a nun—being raped by priests. She was starved and only fed a piece of toast and a cup of coffee. She slaved all day, and her existence inside the convent went on for decades until she finally escaped.

Evidence of Hidden Atrocities.

You might want to research this topic and discover that there have been Roman Catholic churches in Europe with basements that contained the remains of hundreds of newborn babies. These bones were buried there, often as a result of nuns who were raped, hidden away while pregnant, and had their babies killed at birth. This is deeply troubling and offensive. Are you as outraged by this as I am?

The Systemic Nature of the Problem.

I'm not claiming that every priest or every nun has these experiences. I do not know. I know these experiences are documented and have occurred. It is a well-known fact that Catholic priests have molested young boys throughout the history of the Roman Catholic Church, highlighting a significant problem within Roman Catholicism.

Chiniquy's Experience in the Confessional.

In Charles Chiniquy's book, "The Priest, the Woman, & the Confessional," he discusses his experience of spending 50 years investigating and questioning other men's wives in the confessional. He faced the uncomfortable task of asking them about their sexual experiences with their husbands—activities that were not sinful and were not his business to probe into. These matters did not require confession at all.

The Embarrassment and Coercion of Women.

Roman Catholic women often feel embarrassed talking about their sexual fantasies and are reluctant to share them with a priest. Many are told by Roman Catholic priests that unconfessed sins will result in more time in purgatory, leading to punishment for not confessing. As a result, some women humiliate themselves by discussing their sexual fantasies in confessionals, an occurrence that happens daily in various cities.

The Disturbing Nature of the Practice.

What man would allow his 12-year-old boy or girl, along with his wife, to talk about their sexual fantasies with a supposedly celibate man? Regardless of the reasons, whether religious or otherwise, it raises serious concerns. It is reported that there are over a billion Roman Catholics, and to be a member of this faith, one must participate in confession. This means that families must engage in discussions with a celibate priest that can be considered pornographic. Such situations are akin to having a sexual conversation with a porn star.

Shifting Focus: Matthew 6 Revisited.

Let's shift our focus to Matthew 6 and leave the topic of confession behind. It is upsetting to confront the realities of this situation, which has persisted over generations and across many countries. The number of sexual abuse cases resulting from these confessions is staggering.

Private Prayer: The True Method of Confession.

Jesus taught us that when we pray, we should do so in secret — going into our closet and shutting the door, where only God can see and hear us. In that private space, we don't need to provide detailed, pornographic descriptions of our fantasies. We can simply say, "Forgive us our debts as we forgive our debtors." God is already aware of our thoughts and fantasies, whether they are sinful or not.

The Sufficiency of a Simple Confession.

All we need to do is confess, "God, I am a sinner," and humbly ask for mercy. Jesus assures us that those who acknowledge their sins go home justified, meaning they are forgiven. This form of acknowledgment does not require a lengthy confession, as understood in the Roman Catholic tradition. Instead, a simple recognition of being a sinner and asking for forgiveness is sufficient.

God's Knowledge and Our Need for Humility.

God knows the entirety of our sins, and there is no need to list them all in detail during confession. A heartfelt expression such as, "Thank you, God, I am a sinner. I have broken your law and disobeyed you. Please forgive me" is all that is needed to receive forgiveness and justification before God. Isn't that good news?

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Confirmation

Therefore if any man be in Christ

2 Corinthians 5:17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

For I am persuaded nothing is able to separate us

Romans 8:38-39 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

No condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus

Romans 8:1 ¶ *There is* therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Made nigh by the blood of Christ

Ephesians 2:13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

Ye shall be free indeed

John 8:36 *If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.*

Christ hath made us free

Galatians 5:1 ¶ Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

Death—Immortal Souls

Or a Temporary Sleep, while Awaiting the Resurrection?

The Pattern of King David

Acts 2:29, 34 Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of **the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day.** For **David is not ascended into the heavens:** but he saith himself, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand

Step 1. King David died, and is now dead. v.2

Step 2. David was buried, he is in his grave. v. 29

Step 3. David has not been resurrected. The resurrection happens at the "Second Coming."

Step 4. "**David is not ascended into the heavens.**" This will happen at the second coming of Jesus Christ. 1 Thess. 4:13-18.

The Pattern of Jesus Christ

Step 1. Death

Step 2. Burial

Step 3. Resurrection

Step 4. Ascension to Heaven

1 Corinthians 15:3-4 **CHRIST DIED** for our sins according to the scriptures; And that **HE WAS BURIED**, and that **HE ROSE AGAIN** the third day according to the scriptures:

John 20:17 Jesus saith unto her, **Touch me not; for I AM NOT YET ASCENDED** to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, **I ASCEND UNTO MY FATHER, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.**

Death Til The Resurrection Is Like A Twinkling Of An Eye

1 Corinthians 15:51-52 ¶ Behold, I shew you a mystery; we *shall not all sleep*, but **we shall all be changed, IN A MOMENT, IN THE TWINKLING OF AN EYE, AT THE LAST TRUMP:** for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

This Mortal (This Flesh And Blood Body)

...Shall Have Put On Immortality (An Angel Like Body)

Matthew 13:43 Then shall **THE RIGHTEOUS SHINE FORTH AS THE SUN IN THE KINGDOM OF THEIR FATHER.** Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

1 Corinthians 15:53-54 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal *must* put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put

on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

There Is An Earthly House

& An Eternal Body That Is Now In The Heavens (AN ANGEL LIKE BODY)

Matthew 22:30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, **BUT ARE AS THE ANGELS OF GOD IN HEAVEN.**

2 Corinthians 5:1-2 ¶ For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. **2** For in this we groan, earnestly desiring **TO BE CLOTHED** upon with our house which is from heaven:

Saints Never Exist In A “Naked State,” Without A Body

There is an earthly house (this body) and a heavenly body (angel-like) and there is no “naked” existence in between, we are never “unclothed” without a body.

2 Corinthians 5:3-4 If so be that being clothed **WE SHALL NOT BE FOUND NAKED.** **4** For we that are in *this* tabernacle do groan, being burdened: **NOT FOR THAT WE WOULD BE UNCLOTHED,** but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

1 John 3:2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, **WHEN HE SHALL APPEAR, WE SHALL BE LIKE HIM;** for we shall see him as he is.

James 2:26 The body without the spirit is dead.

When We Are “Clothed”, or “Changed”

From Our Mortal Into Our Immortal Bodies “At The Last Trump.”

1 Corinthians 15:50-55 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. ¶ Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

While In This Earthly House We Are Absent From The Lord

Mark 12:25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; **BUT ARE AS THE ANGELS WHICH ARE IN HEAVEN.**

2 Corinthians 5:6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, **whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:**

1 Corinthians 15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that **flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.**

Absent From The Body, And To Be Present With The Lord

2 Corinthians 5:8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

Note: Verse 8 must be understood within the context of verses 1-7. Something we explored above. There is an **earthly house** (this body) and a **heavenly body** (angel like) and **there is no state of being naked in between without a body**. “Willing rather to be absent from the body” (means, Paul was willing to die), and to be present with the Lord. From Paul’s perspective, from the moment of his death until he would see the Second Coming of Jesus Christ would be a twinkling of an eye—he would be unaware of any time that has passed. According to 1 Corinthians 15:51-55 Paul is now asleep (dead) and will be **changed from mortal to immortal—at the last trump**).

Having A Desire To Depart, And To Be With Christ

Philippians 1:21-24 ¶ For to me to live *is* Christ, and to die *is* gain. But if I live in the flesh, this *is* the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. For **I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire TO DEPART, AND TO BE WITH CHRIST**; which is far better: Nevertheless to abide in the flesh *is* more needful for you.

Next Let’s see how Paul understood his own **departure**:

The Time Of My Departure (Paul’s Martyrdom) Is At Hand

2 Timothy 4:6-7 For I am now ready to be offered, and **THE TIME OF MY DEPARTURE IS AT HAND**.
7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith:

Pay careful attention to the very next verse...

Paul Doesn't Receive His Crown Until Christ's Appearing

Paul understood being "present with the Lord" to mean that he would receive his crown, at Jesus Christ's appearance!

2 Timothy 4:8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, **shall give me AT THAT DAY**: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love **HIS APPEARING**.

Let's Review The Pattern of Jesus Christ

- Step 1.** Death
- Step 2.** Burial
- Step 3.** Resurrection
- Step 4.** Ascension to Heaven

The Pattern of Paul

- Step 1.** Paul died, Paul is now dead.
- Step 2.** Paul was buried, Paul is in his grave.
- Step 3.** Paul has not been resurrected. The resurrection is at "his appearing."
- Step 4.** Paul has not ascended into the heavens. This will happen after the resurrection, at the second coming of Jesus Christ. 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18.

The Maid Is Not Dead, But Sleepeth

Matthew 9:24-25 He said unto them, Give place: **FOR THE MAID IS NOT DEAD, BUT SLEEPETH**. And they laughed him to scorn. But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

Mark 5:39-42 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, **Why make ye this ado, and weep? THE DAMSEL IS NOT DEAD, BUT SLEEPETH.** And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, **Talitha cumi;** which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was *of the age* of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment.

Luke 8:49-56 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard *it*, he answered him, saying, **Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.** And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, **WEEP NOT; SHE IS NOT DEAD, BUT SLEEPETH.** And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, **Maid, arise.** And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat. And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

Thy Brother Shall Rise Again

John 11:23 Jesus saith unto her, **THY BROTHER SHALL RISE AGAIN.**

Whosoever Believeth In Me Shall Never Die

John 11:26-27 And **WHOSOEVER LIVETH AND BELIEVETH IN ME SHALL NEVER DIE. BELIEVEST THOU THIS?** 27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

Where Have Ye Laid Him?

John 11:34 And said, **WHERE HAVE YE LAID HIM?** They said unto him, Lord, come and see.

Take Ye Away The Stone

John 11:39 Jesus said, **TAKE YE AWAY THE STONE.** Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days.

Lazarus, Come Forth

John 11:43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, **LAZARUS, COME FORTH.**

Loose Him, And Let Him Go

John 11:44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, **LOOSE HIM, AND LET HIM GO.**

We Shall Not All Sleep

1 Corinthians 15:51-52 ¶ Behold, I shew you a mystery; **WE SHALL NOT ALL SLEEP**, but we shall all be changed, **52** In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

Abraham, Isaac & Jacob Were “Gathered To His People”

Genesis 25:8 Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.

David Slept With His Fathers

1 Kings 2:10 So **DAVID SLEPT WITH HIS FATHERS, AND WAS BURIED** in the city of David.

Acts 2:29, 34 The patriarch **DAVID... IS BOTH DEAD AND BURIED**, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. David is **NOT** ascended into the heavens.

1. David slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 11:21**)
2. Solomon slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 11:43**)
3. Jeroboam slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 14:20**)
4. Rehoboam slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 14:31**)
5. Abijam slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 15:8**)
6. Asa slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 15:24**)
7. Baasha slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 16:6**)
8. Omri slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 16:28**)
9. Ahab slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 22:40**)
10. Jehoshaphat slept with his Fathers (**1 Kings 22:50**)
11. Joram slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 8:24**)
12. Jehu slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 10:35**)
13. Jehoahaz slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 13:9**)
14. Joash slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 13:13**)
15. Jehoash slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 14:16**)
16. Azariah slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 14:21,22**)
17. Jeroboam slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 14:29**)
18. Azariah slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 15:7**)
19. Menahem slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 15:22**)

- 20. Jotham slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 15:38**)
- 21. Ahaz slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 16:20**)
- 22. Hezekiah slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 20:21**)
- 23. Manasseh slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 21:18**)
- 24. Jehoiakim slept with his Fathers (**2 Kings 24:6**)

Concerning Them Which Are Asleep

1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 ¶ But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, **concerning them which are asleep**, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so **them also which sleep in Jesus** will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive *and* remain unto the coming of the Lord **shall not prevent them which are asleep**. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and **the dead in Christ shall rise** first: Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

They who have departed this life.

Genesis 23:2 And Sarah died in Kirjatharba; the same is Hebron in the land of Canaan: and Abraham came to mourn for Sarah, and to weep for her.

Genesis 25:8 Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.

Job 1:19 And, behold, there came a great wind from the wilderness, and smote the four corners of the house, and it fell upon the young men, and they are Dead; and I only am escaped alone to tell thee.

TERMS USED TO EXPRESS;

Corpses.

2 Kings 19:35 And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the LORD went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all Dead corpses.

Nahum 3:3 The horseman lifteth up both the bright sword and the glittering spear: and there is a multitude of slain, and a great number of carcasses; and there is none end of their corpses; they stumble upon their corpses:

Carcases.

Numbers 14:29 Your carcasses shall fall in this wilderness; and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, from twenty years old and upward, which have murmured against me,

Numbers 14:32-33 But as for you, your carcasses, they shall fall in this wilderness. And your children shall wander in the wilderness forty years, and bear your Whoredoms, until your carcasses be wasted in the wilderness.

1 Kings 13:24 And when he was gone, a lion met him by the way, and slew him: and his carcase was cast in the way, and the Ass stood by it, the lion also stood by the carcase.

Those who are not.

Matthew 2:18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

Deceased.

Isaiah 26:14 They are Dead, they shall not live; they are deceased, they shall not rise: therefore hast thou visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish.

Matthew 22:25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother:

CHARACTERIZED BY

Being without the Spirit.

James 2:26 For as the body without the spirit is Dead, so Faith without works is Dead also.

Being incapable of motion.

Matthew 28:4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as Dead men.

Revelation 1:17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as Dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the First and the Last:

Ignorance of all human affairs.

Ecclesiastes 9:5 For the living know that they shall die: but the Dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten.

Absence of all human passions.

Ecclesiastes 9:6 Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.

Inability to glorify God.

Psalms 115:17 The Dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence.

Return not to this life.

Job 7:9 As the cloud is consumed and vanisheth away: so he that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more.

Job 14:10 But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he?

Job 14:14 If a man die, shall he live again? all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my change come.

Eucharist: Preserves from Sin?

“For this reason the Eucharist cannot unite us to Christ without at the same time cleansing us from past sins and preserving us from future sins:”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #1393

“By the same charity that it enkindles in us, the Eucharist preserves us from future mortal sins.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #1395

The blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin

1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins

Revelation 1:5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified

1 Corinthians 6:11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

The LORD shall preserve thee from all evil

Psalms 121:7 The LORD shall preserve thee from all evil: he shall preserve thy soul.

The Lord will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom:

2 Timothy 4:18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve *me* unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

He is able to keep that which I have committed unto him

2 Timothy 1:12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

His saints are preserved for ever

Psalms 37:28 For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off.

Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom

Matthew 25:34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

Matthew 13:43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Luke 12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

Luke 22:29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

John 10:28-30 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand. I and *my* Father are one.

Preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ

1 Thessalonians 5:23 ¶ And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised

James 2:5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?

Kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation

1 Peter 1:5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Preserved in Jesus Christ

Jude 1 ¶ Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, *and* called:

Unto him that is able to present you faultless

Jude 24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present *you* faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

John 14:21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

Eucharist: Helps the Dead?

“The Eucharistic sacrifice is also offered for the faithful departed who ‘have died in Christ but are not yet wholly purified, so that they may be able to enter into the light and peace of Christ.’”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #1371

“In the Eucharist, the Church expresses her efficacious communion with the departed...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #1689

Every one of us shall give account of himself to God

Romans 14:12 So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already

John 3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life

John 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

Beware lest any man spoil you, after the tradition of men

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

God will bring thee into judgment

Ecclesiastes 11:9 Rejoice, O young man, in thy youth; and let thy heart cheer thee in the days of thy youth, and walk in the ways of thine heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: but know thou, that for all these *things* God will bring thee into judgment.

God shall bring every work into judgment

Ecclesiastes 12:13-14 ¶ Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this *is* the whole *duty* of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether *it be* good, or whether *it be* evil.

They shall give account thereof in the day of judgment

Matthew 12:36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

Give an account of thy stewardship

Luke 16:2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward.

Who shall give account to him

1 Peter 4:5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

That will by no means clear the guilty

Exodus 34:6-7 And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear *the guilty*; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth *generation*.

He that believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation

John 5:24-29 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

Ten thousand masses will not change the man who died an unrepentant, unbeliever, into a baptized, repentant, believer

Eucharist: This Is My Body—Part 1

By David Michael Curtis

The document "This Is My Body, This Do in Remembrance of Me—Part 1" by David Michael Curtis discusses the meaning of the phrase "This is my body" spoken by Jesus during the Last Supper.

Here's a summary of the key points:

- The document emphasizes the Passover context of Jesus's words in Luke 22:19, stating that the Last Supper was a commemorative feast, not the original Passover event.
- It argues that Jesus's sacrifice was a one-time event on April 1, 33 AD, and not a repeated sacrifice as believed in the Roman Catholic Mass.
- The document criticizes the Roman Catholic Mass, particularly the belief that the bread is transformed into the actual flesh of Christ and that the Mass is a repeated sacrifice. It also points out the practice of only the priest drinking from the cup during Mass, comparing it to Judas Iscariot's receiving only a morsel of bread at the Last Supper.
- It contrasts the Mass with what it describes as the "true Lord's Supper," where the eleven disciples shared bread and wine as a full meal.
- The document interprets John 6's "eating his flesh" not as literal consumption of bread, but as believing in Jesus Christ.
- It uses the examples of manna in the wilderness and the miraculous bread Jesus multiplied to show that consuming bread does not guarantee eternal life.
- The document emphasizes that salvation is achieved through faith in Jesus Christ's sacrifice, rather than through rituals or the consumption of bread and wine.
- It addresses the disagreement between Martin Luther and Zwingli regarding the Lord's Supper, siding with Zwingli's view that it is a memorial.
- The document critiques the concept of purgatory in Catholic doctrine, asserting that Jesus's blood cleanses us from all sin.
- It clarifies that "This is my body" is a symbolic statement meant to remind us of Jesus's sacrifice on the cross.

Dear Friends,

Luke 22:19 and the Passover Context

Luke 22:19 And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, **This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.**

Jesus spoke these words while he was eating the Passover with his disciples. Understanding the context of Passover helps clarify a very controversial topic within Christianity: Is grace imparted through the bread? Is grace imparted through both the bread and wine? Or are we to only have bread?

The Original Passover and Subsequent Memorials

The original Passover only happened once, as we can read in Exodus 12. Every subsequent Passover has been a memorial feast of that first Passover. The year Jesus died for our sins, there was no danger of the firstborn being slain if they did not apply blood over their doorposts; that was only relevant during the first Passover. This is why every Passover since has not involved the application of blood on doorposts but rather serves as a remembrance of that event.

When Jesus and his disciples celebrated Passover, it was an annual commemorative feast. It was not the actual Passover that Moses and the Hebrews observed in Exodus 12, but rather a commemoration of it. Jesus said, "**This is my body, which is given for you; this do in remembrance of me.**"

Jesus's One-Time Sacrifice vs. Repeated Sacrifice in the Mass

The Book of Hebrews repeatedly establishes that Jesus's sacrifice on the cross occurred once; He is not sacrificed over and over again every time we eat bread. Instead, we are remembering His one-time sacrifice on April 1, 33 AD. It is crucial to understand that Jesus was sacrificed only once because millions of people come to the Roman Catholic Church to partake in the Mass, which teaches that the bread is the actual flesh of Jesus. They believe that by eating the bread, they are performing the actual sacrifice of Jesus Christ repeatedly.

The Significance and Sufficiency of the Mass in Roman Catholicism

Consider how many tens of thousands of priests recite certain words, teaching the belief that the bread is transformed into the flesh of Christ. How often is this done each day? Some Roman Catholic priests perform this Mass repeatedly. The significance of the Mass must be diluted because, in Roman Catholicism, even 4,000 Masses performed throughout a lifetime are insufficient to purge all sins.

In Roman Catholicism, if you are wealthy, your family can pay for as many Masses as they wish. However, even all those Masses, combined with the ones performed throughout your lifetime, are still insufficient to wash away all your sins and grant you immediate entrance into heaven.

The Practice of Communion in the Mass and the Last Supper

During Mass, when you partake, you receive the bread—a small wafer stamped with "IHS." The priest places this wafer on your tongue while only the priest drinks from the cup. This practice reflects the events of the Last Supper and what happened to Judas Iscariot, the man who betrayed Jesus Christ.

John 13:26-27 Jesus answered, *He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it.* And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon. And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, *That thou doest, do quickly.*

At the Last Supper, Jesus took a piece of bread and only gave Judas a small portion, representing a morsel. He dipped the sop into the dish and placed it on Judas's tongue, telling him, "Do quickly what you are about to do." The sop refers to a small piece of bread. Immediately after this, Judas went to the Jewish authorities to accept thirty pieces of silver in exchange for betraying Christ. It's important to note that Judas did not drink from the cup; he only received the morsel that Jesus placed on his tongue. Similarly, Roman Catholics do not drink from the cup but only receive a wafer that the priest places on their tongue.

John 13:30 He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

The True Lord's Supper and the Nature of the Bread

Each time a Roman Catholic participates in the Mass, they reenact the scene involving Judas Iscariot. After Judas left, the true Lord's Supper began. The eleven disciples who remained were not given just a morsel; they broke bread together and drank from the cup, experiencing a full meal. This was not merely a ritual.

Furthermore, the bread they consumed was not literally the flesh of Christ, as Jesus was physically present among them and had not yet died. He would die the following day at three o'clock. The meal took place the night before. If that bread had been an actual sacrifice of Christ's flesh, then Jesus would not have needed to die the next day. They could have simply eaten the bread and drunk the wine, claiming it sufficed as an atonement for their sins. However, that is not what happened.

The Necessity of Christ's Sacrifice on the Cross

After the Last Supper, Christ went to Gethsemane, where he was betrayed. He underwent trial after trial, was beaten, scourged, crucified, and died for our sins on the cross. His flesh and blood were necessary as a redemption price to pay for our sins. The bread and the wine at the Lord's Supper were not sufficient to atone for our sins. Only Jesus's flesh and blood, given on the cross, provided that atonement. The bread and wine offered at the Last Supper served as a memorial for what Christ was about to do the next day.

John 6 and the Meaning of "Eating His Flesh"

I want to draw your attention to John 6, which is highly relevant to this discussion. In this chapter, we are told that we must eat the flesh of Christ; otherwise, we will perish. However, upon careful study, we see that "eating his flesh" does not refer to consuming bread. Instead, it means to believe in Jesus Christ. When we believe in Him, we are metaphorically eating His flesh, which is equivalent to consuming the bread of life. Jesus is the bread of life.

The Miracle of the Bread and the Sea of Galilee

Let me explain what is happening in this chapter. This is one of the two instances where Jesus miraculously fed thousands of people. In this story, Jesus travels to the other side of the Sea of Galilee. Those who had eaten the miraculous bread were unaware that he had departed and journeyed across the sea. Thousands who consumed this miraculous bread began searching for Jesus and eventually found him on the other side of the Sea of Galilee. This is the setting in which the conversation in John 6 takes place.

Manna in the Wilderness vs. the Bread of Life

John 6:48-51 I am that bread of life. **Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.** This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: **and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.**

Jesus mentions that during the Hebrews' 40 years in the wilderness, they ate manna, and yet they died, the manna did not give them eternal life. Here is the first example: the Hebrews received miraculous bread, known as manna, every day except on the Sabbath. This bread came down from heaven and sustained them for 40 years. Jesus points out that all of those who ate that bread are now dead. It did not grant them eternal life; it merely sustained their physical bodies. It nourished their flesh and blood, but it did not offer eternal salvation.

John 6:47-48 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. **I am that bread of life.**

Next, Jesus contrasts the act of eating bread with believing in Him, stating that He is the Bread of Life. He explains that believing in him is akin to eating his flesh. Throughout this chapter, Jesus gives two examples of consuming actual bread as insufficient. He asserts that neither the bread eaten in the wilderness nor the miraculous bread he multiplied imparts eternal life. Those who ate this bread will die, but those who believe in him will be considered as eating the bread of life, resulting in eternal life.

Unbelief Despite Miraculous Bread

John 6:60-66 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying; who can hear it? When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, **Doth this offend you? *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they are spirit, and they are life.* But there are some of you that believe not.** For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said, **Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.** From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

The thousands who participated in the miracle of the multiplied bread and fish found Jesus's teaching to be difficult to accept. According to John 6, many of them turned away and no longer followed him. They had consumed miraculous bread yet did not believe in Jesus. We are taught that if we believe in Jesus, we will not perish but have everlasting life. If we do not believe, we are already condemned.

Two Examples of Miraculous Bread and Their Significance

In summary, we have two examples of people consuming miraculous bread: first, in the wilderness during the time of Moses, and second, through Jesus and the Twelve Apostles. Jesus commanded the thousands to sit in groups of fifty. He took the bread and gave it to the disciples, who then distributed it among the groups. If eating bread could save anyone, it would have been at that moment in the presence of Jesus and his apostles.

The Sacredness of Jesus's Meal and the Necessity of Belief

I would argue that this meal was more sacred than anything you might experience at a Roman Catholic Church, regardless of how many priests are officiating. Jesus Himself and the twelve apostles distributed this meal, yet it did not result in eternal life for those who refused to follow Him, as they did not believe in Him afterward.

It is important to note that “eating his flesh” is a symbolic expression of believing in Jesus Christ. We cannot attain salvation through literal bread; it comes only through believing in Jesus Christ, who offered his flesh and blood as atonement for our sins on the cross. His death was a unique event that cannot be re-enacted. Consuming bread and wine cannot atone for our sins; only Christ’s actual flesh and blood, given on the cross, can save us.

The Clear Message of John 6

I want to make the message from John 6 very clear: You can eat miraculous bread, just as the Hebrews did for 40 years, yet that does not guarantee eternal life.

The Case of Judas and the Morsel of Bread

You could have been in Israel, eating miracle bread distributed by the hand of Jesus himself and the twelve apostles, and still not have eternal life. This means that you can eat a small wafer placed on your tongue, distributed by a priest repeatedly, and still not attain eternal life. Jesus placed a morsel on the tongue of Judas Iscariot, who then betrayed Him. Jesus said it would have been better for Judas if he had never been born, indicating that he would be punished for his betrayal. Judas does not have eternal life despite having received that morsel directly from Jesus.

The Central Issue: Belief in Jesus

This message is repeated throughout Scripture and is beyond debate. Eating miracle bread, even when it is given directly by Jesus, does not grant eternal life. What does it mean to be given eternal life by believing in Jesus Christ? If you believe in Him, you will not perish but will receive the gift of eternal life. Conversely, if you do not believe, you will perish and be condemned. The issue that divides everyone is whether they believe in Jesus or do not believe in Him.

A Clarification for Roman Catholics

I want any Roman Catholics reading this to understand the issue very clearly. It is the real flesh and real blood of Jesus that was given on the cross once and for all that saves us. Roman Catholics emphasize the real flesh and blood of Jesus, but they apply it to bread and wine. I am referring to the actual flesh and blood of Jesus that was beaten, scorched, crucified, and shed at Calvary. The only thing that can cleanse our sins is the blood of Jesus Christ. There is no substitute, and we must have faith or belief in Jesus to partake of this bread of life.

The Cleansing Power of Jesus's Blood and Baptism

The gospel tells us that the blood of Jesus cleanses us from all sin. When we are baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, our sins are forgiven and washed away. We are justified, sanctified, and cleansed in the name of Jesus and by the power of the Holy Spirit through the act of water baptism. When we are submerged underwater in the name of Christ, we are united with His death on the cross.

The Memorial Nature of Passover and the Lord's Supper

The bread and wine at the Passover were a memorial feast that occurred year after year. The only lamb that saved the firstborn was the lamb that was slain during the first Passover, on the last night that the Hebrews were in Egypt. Every Passover since that event has served as a memorial feast. The lambs slain each year at Passover did not save the firstborn; only the lamb slain at the original Passover saved them.

The Uniqueness of Christ's Sacrifice and the Meaning of "This is My Body"

The only flesh and blood that can save us is the real flesh and blood of Jesus, given at Calvary on April 1st, 33 AD. Every memorial feast since, every time we eat bread or drink wine, is meant to remind us of Jesus's flesh and blood when He said, "This is my body." This statement was not literal; it was a token to remind us of His body that was beaten, tortured, and crucified on the cross.

The Disagreement Between Luther and Zwingli

Martin Luther and Zwingli had a famous dispute regarding this issue. Zwingli correctly identified that the Lord's Supper was a memorial of a one-time event that cannot be repeated. Martin Luther, on the other hand, repeatedly quoted, "This is my body," and continued to believe that the bread was literally the flesh of Christ. This disagreement led to a split in Christianity between those who believe it is a memorial and those who believe it is a token from which we receive God's grace through bread and wine.

The Errors of Luther Regarding the Lord's Supper and Baptism

Although Martin Luther correctly understood justification and identified the papacy as the Antichrist, he was mistaken regarding the Lord's Supper and the practice of baptism. We are not to follow his teachings on these subjects; rather, we are to follow Christ. Concerning issues like the Lord's Supper and baptism, Luther erred. The Lord's Supper does not impart grace; we are saved through the one sacrifice Jesus made on the cross. Jesus does not share His glory with bread or inanimate objects. If something we can produce with our hands could save us, then Jesus's death would not have been necessary.

The Insufficiency of the Mass and the Concept of Purgatory

Let us take a moment to reflect on the daily sacrifices of the Roman Catholic Masses. There are Catholics who have participated in the Mass over 4,000 times throughout their lives and wealthy families who pay for thousands of Masses after their loved ones die. Despite all these Masses combined, they do not wash away all their sins. According to Catholic doctrine, they must proceed to purgatory to purify their sins. This concept introduces a different gospel from the one of Jesus Christ.

The True Gospel and the Cleansing Power of Christ's Blood

The true Gospel of Jesus Christ teaches that His blood cleanses us from all sin. When we die, there is no sin left for us to purge; His blood has taken care of it all. The bread and wine consumed during Mass do not wash away our sins; rather, it is the blood of Jesus that does. Jesus offered Himself on the cross once and for all; we cannot reenact this sacrifice that occurred on April 1, 33 AD, but we can memorialize it and remember it. This is how the gospel is spread—by sharing the story of the rugged cross, recounting how Jesus died for our sins and was resurrected as predicted in Scripture.

Salvation Through Faith, Not Ritual

All we can do is hear this story; we cannot reenact it. Nothing we do with our hands can save us; we are saved by faith. Martin Luther was correct when he stated that we are justified, washed, and cleansed from our sins by faith. Justification occurs outside of us because it happened in the past, one time, outside of Jerusalem, when Jesus was condemned to die under Pontius Pilate. He was scourged, nailed to the cross, and died for our sins.

The Choice Between Belief in Jesus and Trust in Rituals

If you wish to be saved, you must believe in Jesus—believe that His life, death, burial, and resurrection atone for your sins. However, if you are trusting in miracle bread, transformed by a priest through some incantation, believing that it will save you, then according to Catholic doctrine, it will not. It does not purge all your sins, and when you die, you will still need to purge your sins in purgatory.

Hebrews 1:3 and the Purging of Sins

Hebrews 1:3 Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, **when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;**

Hebrews 1:3 states that Jesus purged our sins by his sacrifice. Therefore, when a priest tells you that you must purge your sins after you die in purgatory, that is another gospel. The Gospel of Jesus Christ teaches that His one sacrifice on the cross has already purged our sins. When Jesus ascended into heaven, God accepted His sacrifice, which atoned for our sins and reconciled us to God, granting us peace.

The Location of Our Atonement

Since then, Jesus has been seated at the right hand of God, and we are at peace with Him. This reconciliation was achieved solely through Jesus Christ. If your attention shifts away from our High Priest in heaven and His sacrifice to earthly priests and earthly sacrifices performed daily in cathedrals made by human hands, you are looking in the wrong place. Our atonement, as Martin Luther would say, occurred outside of us because it took place in heaven, in a temple not made with human hands.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Eucharist: This Is My Body—Part 2

By David Michael Curtis

The document titled "This Is My Body, This Do in Remembrance of Me—Part 2" is written by David Michael Curtis and discusses his theological interpretations of baptism and the Lord's Supper, particularly in comparison to Roman Catholic practices.

Here are some key points from the document:

- **Critique of Roman Catholicism:** The document strongly critiques Roman Catholic teachings on baptism, particularly infant baptism and the Mass. It argues that these practices rob the Gospel of Jesus Christ of its meaning and misrepresent the true nature of salvation and forgiveness.
- **Baptism:** The author believes that baptism should occur after one has heard the gospel, believed it, and repented. He argues that baptism washes away personal sins, not Adam's original sin, and that sprinkling a baby with water is not true baptism. He also states that the gift of the Holy Spirit is received at water baptism.
- **The Lord's Supper:** The document emphasizes that the Lord's Supper is a memorial, not a means of forgiveness or the washing away of sins. It should be a communal meal, a "love feast," where everyone shares and remembers Christ's sacrifice. The author criticizes modern communion practices, which involve small portions of bread and wine or juice, as unbiblical and contrary to the original intent.
- **Salvation:** The author emphasizes that salvation is achieved through faith in Jesus Christ alone, not through participation in sacraments or rituals. He argues that Jesus is the only source of salvation and that adherence to church traditions or doctrines does not guarantee eternal life.
- **Judgment:** The document discusses the judgment seat of Christ, where each person will be held accountable for their actions. It emphasizes that eating bread or participating in rituals does not guarantee salvation.
- **Personal Experience:** The author shares his experience at First Christian Church in Arcadia, where he initially participated in communion but later felt he could no longer do so in good conscience due to his understanding of the Lord's Supper.
- **Repentance:** The document emphasizes the importance of repentance in the Christian faith and suggests that the Lord's Supper should be approached with a spirit of repentance.

Dear Friends,

The Robbery: Claiming the Mass Purges Sin

Any claim from a Roman Catholic priest that a Mass performed inside a cathedral somehow helps you purge even a tiny bit of sin robs from the Gospel of Jesus Christ. The Gospel teaches us that the blood of Jesus cleanses us, not from just a tiny bit of sin at a time, but from all sin at once—especially when we are baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

Infant Baptism in the Roman Catholic Church

This is why, in the Roman Catholic Church, babies are baptized. However, according to Catholic teaching, the only sin that baptism purges is Adam's original sin and the sins committed up to the moment of baptism. Since babies have not committed any sins, baptism in the Roman Catholic Church does not actually wash away any of their sins. The Church teaches that infant baptism removes original sin, Adam's sin, making it possible for them to be saved. Therefore, in Roman Catholicism, infant baptism is primarily designed to address original sin, not personal sin. Water baptism does not address individual sins; that is the purpose of the Mass, penance, the rosary, venerating statues, and worshipping the Blessed Virgin Mary. All the sacraments in the Catholic Church are intended to deal with personal sins, but baptism is only meant to address Adam's original sin.

The Consequences of Adam's Sin and Individual Accountability

To which? We all die because of Adam's sin. We experienced the first death; our bodies die and return to dust as a consequence of Adam's actions. However, infant baptism will not save anyone from the consequences of original sin. We all face death and return to dust, but none of us will be punished in the lake of fire for Adam's sin. Ezekiel teaches us that a son will not be held accountable for his father's sins, and a father will not be held accountable for his son's sins. Each person will stand before judgment day and be held accountable for their actions.

Ezekiel 18:4 Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: **the soul that sinneth, it shall die.**

Ezekiel 18:20 The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.

The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father; no one will be punished on Judgment Day except for their sins. All men die the first death due to Adam's original sin, but those who experience the second death are punished for their sins. By the way, if you have been taught that souls are immortal, this verse teaches the soul that sins die. God is able to **destroy both soul and body in hell.**

Matthew 10:28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear **him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.**

The Misguided Foundation of Roman Catholicism Regarding Baptism

Therefore, the entire foundation of Roman Catholicism is misguided. Baptism does not remove Adam's sin, which is obvious because baptized babies eventually die, which is the consequence of Adam's sin.

Baptism washed away our sins, not Adam's. Baptism should occur after one has heard the gospel, believed it, and been called to repentance. Only then should we be immersed in water, symbolizing death, and rise again from the water, symbolizing resurrection, in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Sprinkling a baby with water is not true baptism; it merely wets the baby's forehead. Babies have not sinned, and they are not in danger of going to the lake of fire due to Adam's sin. If a baby dies in infancy, Isaiah teaches that such babies are in heaven and will grow up there. Babies are not cast into the lake of fire because they have done nothing wrong.

The Superstition of Infant Damnation and Luther's Misunderstanding

For about 1,800 years, Roman Catholics and Eastern Orthodox believers have been fearful of the superstition that babies go to the lake of fire unless baptized by a priest. This belief is fiction; we do not need to fear it. Martin Luther misunderstood the significance of the Lord's Supper and baptism. He taught that these sacraments impart grace. However, the Lord's Supper was a memorial that early Christians observed when they gathered in homes to partake of the bread and wine. They did not merely receive a small wafer placed on their tongues like Judas; they shared meals. This communal gathering was known as a love feast, central to worship in early Christian house churches, and it was the reason they met.

The Love Feast and the Efficacy of True Baptism

The love feast communicated to Christians that they were forgiven because Jesus died for their sins and taught them to forgive one another, as Jesus had also died for the sins of others. Baptism does not save in the way that Roman Catholics believe. They assert that it saves from past sin—although a baby has committed no past sins—thinking it offers salvation from Adam's sin. In reality, water baptism in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit washes away all sin, whether referred to as original sin, mortal sin, or venial sin. The blood of Christ cleanses us from every sin, leaving not a single one recorded in the books of heaven; all are washed away and forgiven.

1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

The Gift of the Holy Spirit and the Memorial Nature of the Lord's Supper

We receive the gift of the Holy Spirit at water baptism, signifying that this is not merely a theoretical theological grace; we actually receive the Holy Spirit into our hearts. The Lord's Supper does not forgive or wash away our sins; that is accomplished solely through Jesus' one sacrifice, given on the cross, and is applied to us at baptism. The Lord's Supper, as a love feast, is akin to the Passover

that Jesus and the disciples celebrated that night, serving as a memorial of the first Passover before the Hebrews left Egypt.

The Stakes: Eternal Life vs. Condemnation in Roman Catholicism

You need to understand the stakes: eternal life versus condemnation and being lost. Everyone involved understands these stakes. The core of Roman Catholicism is the Mass; transubstantiation is a central element within Roman Catholicism. If you are not participating in the Mass, you are condemned, period. If you are not a Roman Catholic and you are not participating in the sacraments, you are damned—anathema, full stop. This means that every evangelical and Reformed Christian throughout history is condemned and anathema, as they are not partakers of the sacraments of the Roman Catholic Church. If you are not baptized by the Roman Catholic Church and buried by a priest in the Church, you are anathema and condemned. This signifies that you have no chance of salvation.

The Crucial Question: Belief in Roman Catholicism or Jesus Christ?

I am not afraid of this position; it does not bother me in the slightest because I believe in Jesus Christ and what He says in John 6. That is what is at stake here. Who do you believe in more: Roman Catholicism, with its long history of Church Fathers, bishops, cardinals, popes, Church councils, and traditions, or Jesus Christ? That is the crucial question.

Jesus Christ: The Only Source of Salvation

The only one who can save you is Jesus Christ. An army of Roman Catholicism spanning over one thousand years cannot save you if it is not teaching the commandments of Christ. It is that simple. Jesus said that there were men in the wilderness who ate miracle bread during the time of Moses and still did not have eternal life. He also said that there were those standing in front of Him who ate the miracle bread from His hand and the hands of the twelve apostles, yet they did not possess eternal life. Do you believe Jesus? He is the Savior of the world.

The Judgment Seat of Christ and the Example of Judas

Every one of us must stand before the judgment seat of Christ. It is Christ who will divide everyone from the right to the left, the wheat from the tares, the sheep from the goats, the saved from the lost. Jesus acknowledged that some ate miracle bread and still did not have eternal life. Judas, for example, had a sop placed on his tongue by the hand of Jesus, yet that little mouthful did not grant him eternal life or impart any grace to him. Immediately after this, the opposite is demonstrated when Judas betrays Christ. This act was not a sign of grace in his heart, as immediately after eating the sop, the devil filled his heart, leading him to betray Christ.

Persecution for Denying the Efficacy of the Mass

During the Dark Ages, countless Christians were executed and condemned by the Roman Catholic Church over this very issue. A Roman Catholic priest would ask what they believed about the Mass. If they responded that the bread and wine were merely symbols, reminders of Christ's flesh and blood given on the cross, they were condemned, tortured, and burned alive at the stake. The Roman Catholic Church has condemned untold multitudes for denying that the Mass imparts any grace at all, asserting that we are saved by faith in Christ alone because of His sacrifice on the cross, through His blood that was shed once.

The True Meaning of "Eating His Flesh"

I am simply highlighting another perspective—the one conveyed in the Gospels by Jesus himself. He emphasizes that one must "eat his flesh," or else they do not have any life in them. He is the "bread of life," and the way to partake in this bread is by believing in him, not by consuming physical bread. If you believe in him, you gain eternal life; in a sense, you are "eating" his flesh.

The Simplicity of the Gospel Message

The Gospel message is straightforward, revolving around a story told in the final chapters of the four Gospels. Being saved is essentially about believing this story, responding with repentance, turning away from sin, trusting God, and being baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

The Cleansing Power of Baptism and Putting on Christ.

Through baptism, all our sins are forgiven. While we are at risk of experiencing the first death because of Adam's sin, we can escape the second death by having our sins washed away through water baptism. This act does not just forgive our past transgressions; rather, it cleanses us from all sin. We "put on Christ," which means we don his righteousness like a robe because our righteousness is like filthy rags. On Judgment Day, you do not want to stand before God wearing these rags; you want to be clothed in the righteousness of Christ, as stated in Galatians 3:27.

The Importance of Gathering and Remembering Christ

That is what is truly at stake. After baptism, it is important to gather with other Christians to break bread from house to house and hold love feasts, remembering Christ's body and blood. Eating bread does not save you any more than the manna that descended during the time of Moses or the bread that Jesus multiplied. You could consume a wafer blessed by a priest 4,000 times throughout your life, believing it saves you, but that is not the case. Ultimately, according to that doctrine, one would find oneself in purgatory, suffering for one's sins.

The Choice: Belief and Baptism vs. Ritual and Purgatory

Alternatively, you can choose to believe in Jesus Christ, be baptized with water, and have all your sins completely forgiven. This allows you to be reconciled with God, providing peace right now, today. When the hour of your death arrives, you need not fear passing away or facing purgatory. You can know that when Jesus returns, he will call you from the grave and transform you to be like an angel, shining within the city of God—not because of any bread you have eaten in this lifetime, but because Jesus' flesh and blood were offered once on the cross. So, gather with fellow believers, eat and drink, and remember that Jesus died for our sins, as the Scriptures foretold.

My Experience at First Christian Church

A few years ago, I visited the First Christian Church in Arcadia, and I liked it. It was a conservative church—a quite normal setting. On Sunday mornings, you could expect the usual: an offering, a scripture reading, and a sermon that followed an outline.

The Practice of Communion

The reason I am mentioning this is that every Sunday morning, they held communion. At first, I thought it was wonderful because I hadn't been able to attend church and participate in communion for a long time. However, I did not fully understand the things I was sharing in this letter at the time. Today, I cannot partake in communion at that church or any church in good conscience.

The True Meaning of the Lord's Supper

Taking a tiny piece of bread and half an ounce of grape juice is not the Lord's Supper. The little morsel of bread represents what Judas ate. If you examine 1 Corinthians Chapter 11 closely, you will see what the issue was. The first three chapters of 1 Corinthians discuss divisions between home churches. From the very beginning, division was an issue that Paul wanted to address.

Paul's Instructions in 1 Corinthians 11

In Chapter 11, Paul mentions how wealthy people arrived early and consumed all the food and wine, becoming well-fed and drunk. When the poorer people, including slaves, arrived, they found there was nothing left for them to partake in. Paul warned these wealthy individuals that they were eating and drinking damnation unto their souls. He advised them to wait and have the Lord's Supper together so that everyone would have enough to eat and drink.

The Discrepancy with Modern Communion Practices

The modern practice of serving half an ounce of wine or grape juice with just a tiny piece of bread contradicts the principles outlined in 1 Corinthians 11. Paul was condemning the practice of sending people home hungry. The kind of supper where one only receives a crumb and a drop is

exactly what he was warning against. He wanted that church to share a meal, not to be divided by wealth or status, but to eat as one body of Christ, ensuring everyone had enough.

Modern Communion as Unbiblical

Therefore, the modern-day communion service is not only unbiblical but also anti-scriptural. The scriptural way to observe the Lord's Supper is to have a feast, ensuring that everyone is well-fed and no one leaves hungry or thirsty. This is why I can no longer have communion at the First Christian Church; it goes against my conscience. It would violate my conscience because it does not represent the Lord's Supper.

Clarifying What Saves Us

I wanted to include this story about the First Christian Church to clarify what saves us: Jesus' flesh and blood given on the cross, a truth we have reiterated multiple times in this letter. I emphasize this once more because most people are conditioned to view the Lord's Supper as a ritual, believing something magical occurs when they eat the bread and drink the wine or grape juice. The reality is that nothing supernatural happens; it is just bread and grape juice.

The Significance of Baptism

Similarly, when one is baptized, it is just water—not holy water. What makes baptism special is that it is performed in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. That name gives power to the baptism. It is in the name of Jesus that we are forgiven and receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

The True Significance of the Lord's Supper

The significance of the Lord's Supper lies not in the bread or the wine but in the remembrance of Jesus' body and blood given on the cross. This is the main point. Do not seek something supernatural in the bread and grape juice. Instead, turn to the source of the water of life, which is Christ. He is also the source of light; Jesus stated that He is the light of the world. The true bread is not the physical bread you eat; it is Christ's body, which was scourged, beaten, and crucified on the cross to give us life.

Rejecting Ritualism

Stop viewing communion as a mere ritual where something supernatural takes place. Do not think you need to chant or light candles. It is not a ritual—set aside that notion and return to the heart of what the Lord's Supper is about. It serves as a memorial, a shared experience that allows Christians to demonstrate love for one another while remembering that Jesus died for their sins.

The Purpose of Gathering Together

The purpose of gathering together, even if you are a wealthy person eating with a slave, is to remind us that Jesus died for both. The idea that a wealthy person is superior and looks down upon the slave—perhaps even showing up early to eat all the food and drink all the wine or grape juice—is offensive to the very purpose of the Lord's Supper. This behavior is why some eat and drink judgment upon themselves.

The Importance of Conscious Remembrance

It is essential to eat together with a conscious awareness that everyone participating has been forgiven of their sins because Jesus died for us. This awareness will help us love and forgive one another.

Not Eating with Those Living in Sin

However, if someone claims to be a brother but is living in sin, such as fornication, we should not eat with that person. Why? Because they are living in apostasy or rebellion against God. Sharing a meal with them makes you a partaker of their sins, which is why we are instructed not to associate with certain individuals. You should approach this commandment with the mindset of a house church that gathers to break bread together.

The Meaning of Not Eating Together

To remember, Jesus died for our sins. When we are told not to eat with someone, it carries significant meaning. It's not just about avoiding coffee at places like Starbucks or Dunkin' Donuts. It refers to not participating in the Lord's Supper with them, not having fellowship, and not allowing them back into your home until they have resolved their issues, whether that means repentance, finding employment, or addressing other relevant matters.

Examples of Those We Should Not Eat With

You see, you should not eat with someone who refuses to work, someone who is a heretic teaching another gospel, or someone who identifies as a Christian but is living in fornication. Eating and drinking with someone is a meaningful act; it serves as a poignant reminder that Jesus died for our sins and reflects the essence of the gospel itself. After hearing the gospel, we should respond with repentance and baptism in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

Remembering the Gospel Through the Lord's Supper

Although we are baptized only once, every time we gather and break bread, we should remember the gospel—that Christ stood trial under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, and resurrected on the third day to atone for our sins.

Approaching the Lord's Supper with Repentance

When we partake of the Lord's Supper, we should approach it with a spirit of repentance and humility. This is why, if someone has not repented, they should not be present; they need to be asked to leave so that those remaining can partake in the Lord's Supper together.

Christianity: A Daily Call to Repentance

Christianity is a daily call to remember the cross and to repent.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Good Works, Salvation Through

GRACE IS NOT MERITED THROUGH RITUALS, & ORDINANCES, ETC.

Making the Word of God of None Effect through Tradition

Note: A hypocrite is “an actor”

Mark 7:6-9 He answered and said unto them, **Well hath Esaias prophesied of you *hypocrites*, as it is written, This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, **Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.****

Mark 7:13 **Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition,** which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

Matthew 23:25-28 Woe unto you, scribes and *Pharisees, hypocrites!* for **ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.** *Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.* Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for **ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.**

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that **a man is not justified by the works of the law,** but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and **not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.**

Romans 5:1 ¶ Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Trusting in Religious Works for Salvation, Makes Void the Gospel

Trusting in Religious Ordinances, “After the Commandments and Doctrines of Men” will “Beguile you of your Reward”

Colossians 2:12-17 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. ¶ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, **having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; And** having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. ¶ **Let no**

man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body *is* of Christ.

Colossians 2:18-23 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. **Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.**

The Gentiles were Alienated to God by the Religious Ordinances, and Works of the Law of Moses

Ephesians 2:12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

By the Blood of Christ, Jesus hath Broken Down the Middle Wall of Partition *between the Jews and Gentiles*

Ephesians 2:13-14 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. ¶ For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*;

The Religious Ordinances, and Works of the Law of Moses, Have Been Abolished, and No Longer Separate Christians

Ephesians 2:15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, *so* making peace;:

Man Has Access To God, by Christ's Death, and not by the Observance of Religious Ordinances & Church Sacraments

Ephesians 2:16-19 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. For **through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.** Now therefore **ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;**

Men are Saved by Grace through Faith; not by Observing Religious Ordinances, or by the Works of any Religion

Ephesians 2:8-10 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

Man Cannot Be Justified By The Law Of Moses

Acts 13:39. And **by him all that believe are justified from all things**, from which **ye could not be justified by the law of Moses**.

The Law Given That All The World May Become Guilty Before God

Romans 3:19-20. ¶ Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: **that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God**. Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for **by the law is the knowledge of sin**.

Man Is Justified By Faith Without The Deeds Of The Law

Romans 3:27-28. Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. Therefore we conclude that **a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law**.

The Promise, Was Not Through The Law

Romans 4:13-16. **For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace;** to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

Ye Are Not Under The Law, But Under Grace

Romans 6:14. For sin shall not have dominion over you: **for ye are not under the law, but under grace**.

Ye Are Dead To The Law By The Death Of Christ

Romans 7:1-5. ¶ Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, **she is loosed from the law** of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, **she is free from that law;** so that she is no

adulteress, though she be married to another man. Wherefore, my brethren, **ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ**; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

We Are Delivered From The Law

Romans 7:6-7. But now **we are delivered from the law**, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and **not in the oldness of the letter**. ¶ What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, **Thou shalt not covet**.

The Law Of Moses Cannot Condemn Christians

Romans 8:1-4. ¶ **There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus**, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of **the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death**. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, **God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh**: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

Israel Seeks To Be Justified By The Works Of The Law

Romans 9:31-32. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because **they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law**. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Christ Is The End Of The Law

Romans 10:4. For **Christ is the end of the law** for righteousness to every one that believeth.

Only Perfect Obedience Justifies Before The Law

Romans 10:5. **For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.**

Galatians 3:10-13. **For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.** But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. And the law is not of faith: but, **The man that doeth them shall live in them.** Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

Galatians 4:21. ¶ Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

Galatians 5:3-4. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that **he is a debtor to do the whole law**. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

James 2:10-11. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is **guilty of all**. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. **Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.**

By The Works Of the Law Shall No Flesh Be Justified

Galatians 2:16. Knowing that **a man is not justified by the works of the law**, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and **not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.**

I Am Dead To The Law

Galatians 2:19. For **I through the law am dead to the law**, that I might live unto God.

I Do Not Frustrate the Grace Of God

Galatians 2:21. I do not frustrate the grace of God: for **if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.**

No One Receives The Spirit By The Works Of The Law

Galatians 3:2. This only would I learn of you, **Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?**

Galatians 3:5. He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, **doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?**

The Law Cannot Disannul The Promise

Galatians 3:17-19. And this I say, that **the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise:** but God gave it to Abraham by promise. ¶ Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

Righteousness Is Not By The Law

Galatians 3:21. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for **if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.**

The Law Was Our Schoolmaster To Bring Us Unto Christ

Galatians 3:23-24. But **before faith came, we were kept under the law**, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore **the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.**

Christ Came To Redeem Those That Were Under The Law

Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, **God sent forth his Son**, made of a woman, **made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.**

If Ye Be Led Of The Spirit, Ye Are Not Under The Law

Galatians 5:18. But **if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.**

No One Is Able To Keep The Law

Galatians 6:13. **For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law;** but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

John 7:19. **Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?**

The Law Of Commandments Have Been Abolished

Ephesians 2:15. **Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances;** for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace;

How Turn Ye Again... To Be In Bondage?

Galatians 4:8-11 ¶ Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, **how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.** I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

The Law Made Nothing Perfect.

Hebrews 7:19. For **the law made nothing perfect**, but the bringing in of a better hope did; by the which we draw nigh unto God.

Let No Man Beguile You Of Your Reward.

Colossians 2:13-20. ¶ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, **having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;** And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. ¶ Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: **Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. Let no man beguile you of your reward** in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. **Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,**

Hell: The Lake of Fire & The Second Death

Behold, They Shall Be:

Isaiah 47:12-15 Stand now with thine enchantments, and with the multitude of thy sorceries, wherein thou hast laboured from thy youth; if so be thou shalt be able to profit, if so be thou mayest prevail. Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from *these things* that shall come upon thee. **Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame: there shall not be a coal to warm at, nor fire to sit before it.** Thus shall they be unto thee with whom thou hast laboured, *even* thy merchants, from thy youth: they shall wander every one to his quarter; none shall save thee.

Behold, They Shall Be:

- *As stubble*
- *The fire shall burn them*
- *They shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame*
- *There shall not be a coal to warm at*
- *Nor fire to sit before it*

THE DAY COMETH, That Shall Burn As An Oven:

Malachi 4:1 ¶ For, behold, **THE DAY COMETH**, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and **all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up**, saith the LORD of hosts, **that it shall leave them neither root nor branch.**

THE DAY COMETH, That Shall Burn As An Oven:

- *All that do wickedly, shall be stubble*
- *The day that cometh shall burn them up*
- *It shall leave them neither root nor branch*

IN THE DAY That I Shall Do This:

Malachi 4:3 And **ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet IN THE DAY that I shall do *this***, saith the LORD of hosts.

IN THE DAY That I Shall Do This:

- *Ye shall tread down the wicked*
- ***They shall be ashes under the soles of your feet***

The Wicked Shall Be:

Matthew 5:22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, **shall be in danger of hell fire.**

Psalm 9:17 The wicked shall be turned into hell, *and* all the nations that forget God.

The Wicked Shall Be:

- *Shall be in danger of hell fire*
- *Turned into Hell*

The Angels that Sinned:

2 Peter 2:4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but **cast them down to hell**, and delivered them into chains of darkness, **to be reserved unto judgment;**

The Angels that Sinned:

- *Have been cast down to Hell*
- *Delivered into chains of darkness*
- *Are reserved unto Judgment*

Death and Hell were:

Revelation 20:13-15 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. **And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.** And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

Death and Hell were:

- *Cast into the lake of fire*
- *This is the second Death*

Note: The word "Hell," in The Old Testament in mos cases is from the Hebrew word "Sheol", which translated means "the grave." So it is, that Death and Hell (the grave) were cast into the lake of fire, and this is the second Death.

Hell Fire Will:

Deuteronomy 32:22 For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains.

Hell Fire Will:

- *Burn unto the lowest Hell*
- *Consume the earth*
- *Set on fire the foundations of the mountains*

The Wicked Have:

Mark 9:42-48 And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than **having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched**: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than **having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched**: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than **having two eyes to be cast into hell fire**: Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

The Wicked Have:

- *Two hands to go into Hell*
- *Two feet to be cast into Hell*
- *Two eyes to be cast into Hell fire*

The First & Second Resurrections:

Revelation 20:5 But The rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. this is the first resurrection.

John 5:29 And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life (first resurrection); and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation (second resurrection).

The First & Second Resurrections:

- *The Saints partake of the First Resurrection which occurs at the beginning of the 1000 years.*
- *The wicked partake of the Second Resurrection which occurs at the end of the 1000 years, to face the Judgment, the Lake of Fire and the Second Death.*

Hell Fire Shall Not Be Quenched

Numbers 11:2 And the people cried unto Moses; and when Moses prayed unto the LORD, **the fire was quenched.**

2 Kings 22:17 Because they have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, that they might provoke me to anger with all the works of their hands; **therefore my wrath shall be kindled against this place, and shall not be quenched.**

2 Chronicles 34:25 Because they have forsaken me, and have burned incense unto other gods, that they might provoke me to anger with all the works of their hands; **therefore my wrath shall be poured out upon this place, and shall not be quenched.**

Isaiah 34:10 *It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever:* from generation to generation **it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever.**

Note: The definition of "quench", *To extinguish; to put out; as, to quench flame.*

That Which is not Quenched Night nor Day:

Isaiah 43:17 Which bringeth forth the chariot and horse, the army and the power; they shall lie down together, **THEY SHALL NOT RISE: THEY ARE EXTINCT, they are quenched as tow.**

Jeremiah 7:20 Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, mine anger and my fury shall be poured out upon this place, upon man, and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and **it shall burn, and shall not be quenched.**

That Which is not Quenched Night nor Day:

- *"shall lie waste"*
- *none shall pass through it for ever and ever*

Jerusalem Suffered Fire that was not Quenched:

Jeremiah 17:27 But if ye will not hearken unto me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and **it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.**

Note: Jerusalem is not burning today!

Israel Suffered Fire that was not Quenched:

Ezekiel 20:47-48 And say to the forest of the south, Hear the word of the LORD; Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will kindle a fire in thee, and it shall devour every green tree in thee, and every dry tree: the flaming flame shall not be quenched, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burned therein. **And all flesh shall see that I the LORD have kindled it: it shall not be quenched.**

Where their Worm Dieth not:

Isaiah 66:24 And they shall go forth, and look upon **THE CARCASSES OF THE MEN that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched;** and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

Concerning Hell Fire Which Is Not Quenched:

- *They look upon the carcasses (dead bodies)*
- *Their worm shall not die—the worms feasting on the carcasses of the wicked have eternal life*

Where their Worm Dieth not:

- Where **their worm dieth not**, and the fire is not quenched. (Mark 9:44)

- Where **their worm dieth not**, and the fire is not quenched. (Mark 9:46)
- Where **their worm dieth not**, and the fire is not quenched. (Mark 9:48)

Everlasting Punishment

Matthew 25:46 And these shall go away **into everlasting punishment**: but the righteous into life eternal.

Note: The punishment of the wicked is everlasting. There are no second chances after the lake of fire judgment, which ends in the second death. The second death is an everlasting punishment. The wicked will never be raised to life again.

The Example of Sodom and Gomorrah

Jude 7 Even as **Sodom and Gomorrah**, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are **set forth for an example, SUFFERING THE VENGEANCE OF ETERNAL FIRE.**

2 Peter 2:6 And turning the cities of **Sodom and Gomorrah** **INTO ASHES** condemned *them* with an overthrow, **making *them* an ensample** unto those that after should live ungodly;

The Example of Sodom and Gomorrah:

- *Are suffering the vengeance of eternal fire (Jude 7)*
- *Sodom and Gomorrah have been turned to ashes (2 Peter 2:6)*

Tormented Day and Night Forever and Ever

Revelation 14:10-11 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And **the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever**: and **THEY HAVE NO REST DAY NOR NIGHT**, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

Revelation 20:10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and **SHALL BE TORMENTED DAY AND NIGHT for ever and ever.**

There shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth, (it will be awful, more dreadful than any death in history, except for the death of Jesus Christ on the Cross), there shall be no rest from the punishment in the lake of fire for an entire day, and an entire night.

Are There Not Twelve Hours In The Day?

John 11:9 Jesus answered, ***ARE THERE NOT TWELVE HOURS IN THE DAY?*** If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

Are There not Twelve Hours in the Day?

- **Genesis 1:5** the evening and the morning were the first day.
- **Genesis 1:8** And the evening and the morning were the second day.
- **Genesis 1:13** And the evening and the morning were the third day.
- **Genesis 1:19** And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.
- **Genesis 1:23** And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.
- **Genesis 1:31** ¶ And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Behold, **THE DAY Cometh**:

Malachi 4:1 ¶ For, behold, **THE DAY cometh**, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and **THE DAY** that **cometh** shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that ***it shall leave them neither root nor branch.***

Behold, **THE DAY cometh**:

- *All that do wickedly, shall be stubble*
- **THE DAY** that cometh shall burn them up
- *It shall leave them neither root nor branch*

In **THE DAY** That I Shall Do This:

Malachi 4:3 And ye shall tread down the wicked; for **they shall be ashes** under the soles of your feet **IN THE DAY** that I shall do ***this***, saith the LORD of hosts.

The GREAT DAY of the LORD

Zephaniah 1:14 **THE GREAT DAY OF THE LORD** is near, it is near, and hasteth greatly, even the voice of **THE DAY OF THE LORD**: the mighty man shall cry there bitterly.

Revelation 6:17 For **THE GREAT DAY** of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

Revelation 16:14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, *which* go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of **THAT GREAT DAY** of God Almighty.

DAY of wrath.

Romans 2:5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against **THE DAY** of wrath and revelation of the Righteous Judgment of God;

Revelation 6:17 For **THE GREAT DAY** of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

Job 21:30 That the wicked is reserved to **THE DAY** of destruction? they shall be brought forth to **THE DAY** of wrath.

DAY of Judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

2 Peter 3:7 But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against **THE DAY** of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

DAY of destruction.

Job 21:30 That the wicked is reserved to **THE DAY** of destruction? they shall be brought forth to **THE DAY** of wrath.

Romans 9:22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

1 Peter 2:8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: **whereunto also they were appointed**

Judgment of the great DAY.

Jude 6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness **unto the judgment of THE GREAT DAY**.

Proverbs 16:4 ¶ The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, **even the wicked for THE DAY** of evil.

2 Peter 2:9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to **reserve the unjust unto THE DAY** of judgment to be punished:

Tormented DAY And NIGHT For Ever And Ever

1 Samuel 1:22 But Hannah went not up; for she said unto her husband, I will not go up until the child be weaned, and then I will bring him, that he may appear before the LORD, **AND THERE ABIDE FOR EVER**.

***Note:** Hundreds of examples could be cited in which something is said to last for ever, which time has ended. The ordinances in Leviticus for example. Here Samuel is promised to dwell at The Tabernacle in Shiloh for ever. Samuel is no longer at Shiloh. **For ever, Biblically is defined as long as he lives.** God lives for ever, in the sense that he has always existed and always will exist. The Christian has Eternal Life in Christ. In the case of the wicked, and their destruction in the Lake of Fire, it lasts for ever, which is, as long as he lives, until they experience the second and final Death.*

Many Stripes & Few Stripes

Luke 12:46-48 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, ***SHALL BE BEATEN WITH MANY STRIPES***. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, ***SHALL BE BEATEN WITH FEW STRIPES***. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

***Note:** The time duration of the Lake of Fire is a DAY and NIGHT, for in the same DAY the Saints will look upon the corpses of the wicked and tread upon their ashes. They will be stubble. What Jesus is teaching us, in Luke 12:46-48, is that the wicked receive different degrees of punishment. For some it may only last a few moments, for others, such as Satan, the Beast, the False Prophet, those who Receive the Mark of the Beast, and the Fallen Angels, they will be tormented the full Day and Night in the Lake of Fire. The fire will not be quenched, there smoke ascends forever, and afterward experiencing the second Death, their worms that Church the earth where their corpses lay, will never die.*

The Smoke Thereof Shall Go Up For Ever:

Isaiah 34:10 It shall not be quenched ***NIGHT*** nor ***DAY***; the smoke thereof shall go up for ever: from generation to generation **IT SHALL LIE WASTE**; none shall pass through it for ever and ever.

The Smoke Thereof Shall Go Up For Ever:

- **IT SHALL LIE WASTE**
- *None shall pass through it*
- *For ever and ever*

Are Souls in the Lake Of Fire Immortal?

And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is ABLE TO DESTROY BOTH SOUL AND BODY IN HELL. (Matthew 10:28)

The Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus

Luke 16:23 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

- Evidence this is a parable—Abraham's bosom is symbolic language (not literal)—Christian's don't literally live for all eternity in the bosom of Abraham.
- The sole purpose of this parable is revealed at the end when Jesus said: **Luke 16:31** **"IF THEY HEAR NOT MOSES AND THE PROPHETS, NEITHER WILL THEY BE PERSUADED, THOUGH ONE ROSE FROM THE DEAD."**
- **The rich man (The Pharisee's) was not persuaded even though Lazarus was in fact raised from the dead John 11)**
- After his resurrection from the dead, Lazarus ate with Jesus and Simon, who was a very wealthy Pharisee. Simon had been miraculously healed by Jesus from leprosy. **Even though he was eating with Lazarus, a man who had been dead, Simon, a rich pharisee, would not believe that Jesus was the Messiah.** Simon was the Father of Judas Iscariot, who betrayed Christ. (Matthew 26:6-13; Mark 14:3-13; Luke 7:36-50; 10:38-42; John 12:1-11).

There was no Place Found for Them

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and Brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, **from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and THERE WAS FOUND NO PLACE FOR THEM**. (Revelation 20:10-11)

VERSE 10: The day is coming, in which **THE WHOLE EARTH WILL BLAZE WITH FIRE**, for the sole purpose of destroying Satan, the Beast, the False Prophet, those who Receive the Mark of the Beast, as well as all the Fallen Angels, and all those who have had their names blotted out of the Book of Life.

VERSE 11: Immediately following the earth being covered by a Lake of Fire (verse 10), the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. Search the whole universe for the wicked—there was found no place for them. Look to the depths down to the core of the new earth to find them—there was found no place for them. Can you Discover even one atom left of Satan and the slain wicked? - there was found no place for them. The Lake of Fire is not moved to another place—there was found no place for them.

The Second Death

- Never Again—Shall They Live.
- Their Monuments All Gone, All Destroyed In The Lake Of Fire.
- The Lost Slain Are Forever Forgotten.
- Satan is Forever Destroyed.
- The Wicked Are No More.
- This Is The Second Death

The Heart of God

2 Samuel 19:4 But the king covered his face, and the king cried with a loud voice, O my son Absalom, O Absalom, my son, my son!

2 Peter 3:9-11 ¶ The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. But **THE DAY OF THE LORD will come as a thief in the night; in the which THE HEAVENS SHALL PASS AWAY with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein SHALL BE BURNED UP.** ¶ Seeing then that **ALL THESE THINGS SHALL BE DISSOLVED**, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness.

Holy Orders

Evangelists, Bishops, Elders & Deacons

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even Christ*; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even Christ*. **Matthew 23:8-10**

Evangelists

Strong's Greek Dictionary

2099. εὐαγγελιστής euangelistes (euangelistés)
εὐαγγελιστής euangelistés, *yoo-ang-ghel-is-tace'*

from G2097; a preacher of the gospel:—evangelist.

masculine noun

Acts 6:1-7 ¶ And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. **Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples *unto them*, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.** Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and **they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parnenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch:** Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands on them. And **the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.**

Acts 21:8 ¶ And the next *day* we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Caesarea: and we entered into the house of **Philip the evangelist, which was *one* of the seven; and abode with him.**

Ephesians 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, **evangelists**; and some, pastors and teachers;

2 Timothy 4:5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, **do the work of an evangelist**, make full proof of thy ministry.

Bishops

Strong's Greek Dictionary

1984. ἐπισκοπή episkope (episkopé)

ἐπισκοπή episkopé, *ep-is-kop-ay'*

from G1980; inspection (for relief); by implication, superintendence; specially, the Christian "episcopate":—the office of a "bishop", bishoprick, visitation.

feminine noun

Strong's Greek Dictionary

1985. ἐπίσκοπος episkopos (epískopos)

ἐπίσκοπος episkopos, *ep-is'-kop-os*

from G1909 and G4649 (in the sense of G1983); a superintendent, i.e. **Christian officer** in genitive case **charge of a** (or the) **church** (literally or figuratively):—**bishop, overseer**.

masculine noun

Timothy 3:1-7 ¶ This is a true saying, If a man desire **the office of a bishop**, he desireth a good work. **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;** (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) **Not a novice**, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which **the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood**.

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, **with the bishops** and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

2 Timothy 4:22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen. The second *epistle* unto **Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians**, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

Titus 3:15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace *be* with you all. Amen. It was written to **Titus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians**, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

1 Peter 2:25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto **the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls**.

Elders

1 Timothy 5:1 ¶ Rebuke not **an elder**, but intreat *him* as a father; *and* the younger men as brethren;

1 Timothy 5:17 Let **the elders that rule well** be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

1 Timothy 5:19 Against **an elder** receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

Titus 1:5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and **ordain elders in every city**, as I had appointed thee:

Hebrews 11:1-2 ¶ Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For **by it the elders obtained a good report**.

James 5:14 Is any sick among you? let him **call for the elders of the church**; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

1 Peter 5:1 ¶ The elders which are among you **I exhort, who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

1 Peter 5:5 ¶ Likewise, ye younger, **submit yourselves unto the elder**. Yea, all *of you* be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

2 John 1 ¶ **The elder** unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

3 John 1 ¶ **The elder** unto the wellbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

Deacons

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:8-13 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these

also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless. Even so *must their wives be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Ministers & Pastors

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ. **Matthew 23:8-10**

2 Chronicles 15:3 Now for a long season Israel *hath been* without the true God, and without a **teaching priest**, and without law.

Jeremiah 3:15 And **I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.**

Jeremiah 17:16 As for me, **I have not hastened from *being* a pastor to follow thee:** neither have I desired the woeful day; thou knowest: **that which came out of my lips was *right* before thee.**

Matthew 28:20 **Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:** and, lo, I am with you *always, even unto the end of the world.* Amen.

Acts 13:1 ¶ Now there were **in the church that was at Antioch** certain prophets and **teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon** that was called Niger, and **Lucius** of Cyrene, and **Manaen**, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, **and Saul.**

Romans 12:7 Or ministry, **let us wait on our ministering:** or he that teacheth, on teaching;

1 Corinthians 12:29 *Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?*

Hebrews 5:12 For when for the time **ye ought to be teachers,** ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

1 Peter 5:1-3 ¶ **The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder,** and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over *God's* heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

Not Greedy of Filthy Lucre

Isaiah 56:11 Yea, *they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand*: they all look to their own way, **every one for his gain**, from his quarter.

1 Timothy 3:3 Not given to wine, no striker, **not greedy of filthy lucre**; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

1 Timothy 3:8 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, **not greedy of filthy lucre**;

Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, **not given to filthy lucre**;

Titus 1:11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, **for filthy lucre's sake**.

1 Peter 5:2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; **not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind;

Jude 11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and **ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward**, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

Not Adorned with Costly Array & Jewelry

Matthew 11:7-8 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, *What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.*

1 Timothy 2:9-10 ¶ In like manner also, **that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array**; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

1 Peter 3:1-6 ¶ Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with fear. **Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel**; But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

Preach the Word—Not Philosophy & Fables

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

Deuteronomy 6:12 *Then* beware lest thou forget the LORD, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

Matthew 7:15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

Matthew 10:17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

Matthew 16:6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Philippians 3:2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

2 Peter 3:17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Song of Solomon 2:15 Take us the foxes, the little foxes, that spoil the vines: for our vines *have* tender grapes.

Jeremiah 29:8 ¶ For thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Let not your prophets and your diviners, that *be* in the midst of you, deceive you, neither hearken to your dreams which ye cause to be dreamed.

Romans 16:17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Ephesians 5:6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Hebrews 13:9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

2 John 8 Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

Acts 17:18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

Acts 17:32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this *matter*.

Romans 1:21-22 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified *him* not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

1 Corinthians 1:19-23 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where *is* the wise? where *is* the scribe? where *is* the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;

1 Corinthians 3:18-19 ¶ Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

1 Corinthians 15:35-36 ¶ But some *man* will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? *Thou* fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:

2 Corinthians 10:5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

1 Timothy 6:20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

2 Timothy 2:17 And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus;

2 Timothy 2:18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

2 Timothy 3:13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

Colossians 2:22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

Matthew 15:2-9 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, **Why do ye also transgress the**

commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to *his* father or *his* mother, *It is a gift*, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; And honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with *their* lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

Mark 7:3-13 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, *Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.*

Galatians 1:14 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

1 Peter 1:18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

Colossians 2:20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,

Galatians 4:3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:

Galatians 4:9 But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

Ephesians 2:2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

Ephesians 4:20 But ye have not so learned Christ;

Holy Orders: Condemnation of Honorific Titles.

By David Michael Curtis

The file "Holy Orders Condemnation of Honorific Titles.pdf" by David Michael Curtis discusses the concept of holy orders in Roman Catholicism and argues against the use of honorific titles within Christianity.

Here's a summary of the key points:

- **Holy Orders in Roman Catholicism:** The document explains that holy orders involve specific roles like monks, nuns, priests, bishops, and cardinals, who are believed to perform sacramental acts.
- **Apostles' Example of Humility:** It highlights examples from the Bible where apostles like Paul, Peter, and John did not seek special titles or dominion over others. They presented themselves as equals with other elders.
- **Condemnation of Honorific Titles:** The document argues against using titles like "reverend," "father," or "Holy Father," stating that reverence should be directed solely towards God. It cites scripture to support this view, including Matthew 23:8-10 and Psalm 111:9.
- **Interactions with the Churches of Christ:** It mentions interactions with individuals from the Churches of Christ and their beliefs about baptism. While finding some of their doctrines commendable, the author disagrees with their stance that baptisms in other denominations are invalid.
- **Validity of Baptisms in Other Denominations:** The document asserts that genuine children of God exist in various denominations and that baptisms performed in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are valid, regardless of who administers them. The authority lies in Jesus Christ's name, not the individual performing the baptism.
- **Equality of Believers in Christ:** It emphasizes the principle that Christ taught the apostles to consider themselves all equal, contrasting this with the concept of holy orders in Roman Catholicism.
- **Significance of God's Name Over Titles:** The document stresses that the efficacy of acts like baptism comes from the name of Jesus Christ, not the person performing them.
- **Power and Holiness of God's Name:** It emphasizes the importance of reverencing God's name and making prayers effective in Jesus' name.

In essence, the document argues against hierarchical structures and honorific titles within Christianity, emphasizing the equality of believers and the authority of Jesus Christ's name.

Dear Friends,

The concept of holy orders in Roman Catholicism encompasses the various orders, such as Dominican and Benedictine monks, nuns, priests, bishops, and cardinals. The significance of holy orders lies in the belief that certain sacramental acts—such as baptism, Mass, burial of the dead, last rites, and the absolution of sins—can only be performed by those within these sacred orders. As laypeople, we are not authorized to carry out these important religious functions.

The Apostles' Example of Humility.

When the Apostle Paul met with James, Peter, and John in Jerusalem, he mentioned in Galatians 2 that they seemed to be pillars, but this status meant little to him.

Galatians 2:6 But of these who seemed to be somewhat, **(whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:)** for they who seemed *to be somewhat* in conference added nothing to me:

Paul consistently emphasized that he did not lord over the faith of the Corinthian church.

2 Corinthians 1:24 **Not for that we have dominion over your faith,** but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

Similarly, the Apostle Peter, although an apostle, referred to himself as an elder in his epistle, thus presenting himself as equal to the other elders of the church he was addressing.

1 Peter 5:1-4 The elders which are among you I exhort, **who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, **taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint**, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; **Neither as being lords over God's heritage**, but being ensamples to the flock. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

The Apostle John also called himself an elder in his epistles.

2 John 1 **The elder** unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

This demonstrates that the apostles did not claim any special titles; their role as apostles was based on their calling by Christ and their status as eyewitnesses of His resurrection. They testified that Jesus was alive after His death and burial, and these men were hand-selected by Christ. However, scripture shows that they did not seek to dominate or control other believers. They were equals with other elders. This attitude is how we ought to treat one another—as brothers and sisters in Christ.

Condemnation of Honorific Titles.

It is contrary to Christ's commandments to adopt special titles or refer to ourselves as "reverend." There are no "reverends" mentioned in the New Testament. Additionally, Jesus instructed us not to call anyone on earth "father." In the Old Testament, it is stated that holy and reverend is God's name, indicating that our reverence should be directed solely towards God, not any person.

Psalms 111:9 He sent redemption unto his people: he hath commanded his covenant for ever: **holy and reverend is his name.**

Jesus said the only one who is good is God. Therefore, we should not take titles for ourselves like "Holy Father," "Reverend," or call a priest "Father." Such titles contradict scripture. If you are looking to a man on earth as holding a special office that requires a certain title, such as "Doctor" or "Reverend," remember that even the apostles identified themselves as just elders.

Matthew 23:8-10 But **be not ye called Rabbi:** for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren. And **call no man your father upon the earth:** for one is your Father, which is in heaven. **Neither be ye called masters:** for one is your Master, *even* Christ.

Interactions with the Churches of Christ.

I have engaged with individuals from the Churches of Christ. While I find many of their doctrines commendable—including the confessions of Christ and sin and the importance of the gospel—they hold a firm stance regarding baptism. When pressed for their beliefs, they assert that all water baptisms performed in other denominations, such as Baptists, Methodists, Lutherans, Presbyterians, and Pentecostals, are invalid. They believe that anyone wishing to be saved must undergo baptism again within the Churches of Christ.

Refusal to Condemn and Judge.

Despite my appreciation for many of their teachings, I cannot fellowship with them. Jesus taught us to "condemn not, and you will not be condemned" and "judge not, and you will not be judged." I cannot align myself with any institutional church that claims exclusivity in salvation and teaches that everyone else is damned. As a follower of Jesus, I do not have the authority to condemn anyone. This point is crucial, as I often critique various institutional churches, including Roman Catholicism, and encourage individuals to consider starting house churches. However, I do not judge those who choose to remain in these institutions. That authority belongs only to Jesus Christ, who will judge the living and the dead.

The Validity of Baptisms in Other Denominations.

Now, regarding the concept of holy orders outside of Roman Catholicism—within the Churches of Christ, some ministers and elders claim they are the only ones authorized to baptize individuals. I do not share this belief. I am confident that there are genuine children of God in various denominations, including Baptist, Methodist, Lutheran, and Presbyterian churches. I believe God can call some of them to leave their institutional churches, while others may remain until the harvest when the angels separate the wheat from the tares.

The Authority Behind Baptism.

Ultimately, I am content to leave people in their respective churches if that is their choice; God will sort everything out at the second coming. Do I believe in holy orders? No. What validates a baptism performed in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit is not the individual administering the baptism but rather the authority of Jesus Christ's name. Therefore, your salvation does not hinge on the person who baptized you but on your faith in Christ. It is your faith in His name that grants authority to your baptism, which is why I regard water baptisms conducted by Baptists, Lutherans, and Methodists as authentic, even if the person performing the baptism is later revealed to be a false prophet.

The Equality of Believers in Christ.

Regarding holy orders, Christ taught the apostles not to take titles and to consider themselves all equal. This principle is crucial because it distinguishes Christianity from a major counterfeit system within Roman Catholicism, where one of the sacraments is the distinction of roles and titles as though they hold significant meaning.

The Significance of God's Name Over Titles.

The concept of holy orders often implies that these individuals perform special acts like baptism or the Mass, giving the impression that their roles grant them unique authority. However, it is not the person performing the baptism who holds significance; rather, it is the name of Jesus Christ that gives it efficacy. When we are baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, it is that name that washes us from sin and grants us the gift of the Holy Spirit, sealing us until the day of redemption. The authority lies with Jesus, who possesses all authority in heaven and on earth. If you call upon the name of the Lord, you will be saved.

The Efficacy of Baptism in Jesus' Name.

When we read about the power of Jesus's name in the Book of Acts, we learn that believing in His name washes and forgives us from all our sins—something the law of Moses could not achieve. The significance of baptism stems from the names of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

The Power and Holiness of God's Name.

We are instructed to reverence God's name, as Jesus taught us in the Lord's Prayer, calling our heavenly Father "Holy" because He is holy. Therefore, instead of reverencing a man, we should elevate God, our Father in heaven, and when making our prayers effectual, we should do so in Jesus' name.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Indulgences

Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money

Acts 8:18-22 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, **Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.** Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

The gift of God

Romans 6:23 For the wages of sin *is* death; but the gift of God *is* eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death

James 1:15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures

1 Corinthians 15:3 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures;

For by grace are ye saved through faith

Ephesians 2:8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

Not by works of righteousness which we have done

Titus 3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Infant Baptism

Do Babies that Die Go to Heaven?

Luke 18:15-17 And **they brought unto him also infants**, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, **Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.** Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.

Isaiah 11:6-9 The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and **a little child shall lead them.** And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And **the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain:** for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

Isaiah 65:17-25 NLT “Look! I am creating new heavens and a new earth, and no one will even think about the old ones anymore. Be glad; rejoice forever in my creation! And look! I will create Jerusalem as a place of happiness. Her people will be a source of joy. I will rejoice over Jerusalem and delight in my people. And the sound of weeping and crying will be heard in it no more. **“No longer will babies die when only a few days old. No longer will adults die before they have lived a full life. No longer will people be considered old at one hundred!** Only the cursed will die that young! In those days people will live in the houses they build and eat the fruit of their own vineyards. Unlike the past, invaders will not take their houses and confiscate their vineyards. For my people will live as long as trees, and my chosen ones will have time to enjoy their hard-won gains. They will not work in vain, and their children will not be doomed to misfortune. For they are people blessed by the LORD, and their children, too, will be blessed. I will answer them before they even call to me. While they are still talking about their needs, I will go ahead and answer their prayers! The wolf and the lamb will feed together. The lion will eat hay like a cow. But the snakes will eat dust. In those days no one will be hurt or destroyed on my holy mountain. I, the LORD, have spoken!”

Infant Baptism

Argument used in Favor of.

ADMINISTERED TO HOUSEHOLDS

Assumes Babies Were Present. Mere Speculation, Lacks Evidence

Acts 16:15. And when she was baptized, and **her household**, she Besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be Faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

Acts 16:30-34 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, **and thy house**. And **they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house**. And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway. And **when he had brought them into his house**, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

1 Corinthians 1:16. And I **baptized** also **the household of** Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

Infants lack the requirements for Baptism. For the same reason that Infants cannot get their driver's license (not meeting the minimum legal age of 16), the law of Christ requires that one first hear the gospel, believe and repent.

Faith Necessary To.

Acts 8:36-38. And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, **See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God**. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and **he baptized him**.

Acts 18:8. And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians **hearing believed, and were baptized**.

Acts 19:4-5 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that **they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus**. **When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus**.

Confession Of Sin Necessary To.

Matthew 3:6. And were **baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins**.

Repentance Necessary To.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, **Repent**, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

“Much Water,” The Outward And Visible Sign In.

1 Corinthians 10:2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud **and in the sea**;

John 3:23. And John also was baptizing in AEnon near to Salim, **because there was much water there**: and they came, and were baptized.

Acts 8:36-39 And as they went on *their* way, **they came unto a certain water**: and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and **they went down both into the water**, both Philip and the eunuch; and **he baptized him**. And **when they were come up out of the water**, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

Acts 10:47. **Can any man forbid water**, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

Infant Baptism did not originate with the Apostles, rather its origins trace back to Irenaeus circa 200 AD, and did not take a stronghold within Christendom until the 5th century during the time of Augustine.

*And he said unto them, **Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. Mark 7:9***

Babies are not capable of confessing Christ, confession & repentance from sins, or hearing or believing the Gospel (death, burial & resurrection of Christ).

For Further Study

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

Matthew 3:16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:

Acts 8:38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 18:8 And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.

Matthew 3:6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

Acts 16:30-31 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

Acts 16:33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

Acts 2:41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added *unto them* about three thousand souls.

Acts 8:12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

Age Of Accountability

A person was considered an adult in Israel at age 20.

Numbers 14:29 Your carcasses shall fall in this wilderness; and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, **from twenty years old and upward**, which have murmured against me,

Numbers 32:11 Surely none of the men that came up out of Egypt, **from twenty years old and upward**, shall see the land which I sware unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob; because they have not wholly followed me:

At the age of 20 a person could serve in the temple.

Ezra 3:8 ¶ Now in the second year of their coming unto the house of God at Jerusalem, in the second month, began Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, and Jeshua the son of Jozadak, and the remnant of their brethren the priests and the Levites, and all they that were come out of the captivity unto Jerusalem; and appointed the Levites, **from twenty years old and upward**, to set forward the work of the house of the LORD.

Leviticus 27:3 And thy estimation shall be of the male **from twenty years old even unto sixty years old**, even thy estimation shall be fifty shekels of silver, after the shekel of the sanctuary.

A man was old enough to fight in war at age 20.

Numbers 26:2 Take the sum of all the congregation of the children of Israel, **from twenty years old and upward**, throughout their fathers' house, all that are able to go to war in Israel.

Age to be considered an adult in the census was 20.

Numbers 1:3 **From twenty years old and upward**, all that are able to go forth to war in Israel: thou and Aaron shall number them by their armies.

The age of Levites who served in the temple was 20.

1 Chronicles 23:24 ¶ These *were* the sons of Levi after the house of their fathers; *even* the chief of the fathers, as they were counted by number of names by their polls, that did the work for the service of the house of the LORD, **from the age of twenty years and upward**.

Those who were 20 and older had to pay $\frac{1}{2}$ shekel atonement offering.

Exodus 30:14 Every one that passeth among them that are numbered, **from twenty years old and above**, shall give an offering unto the LORD.

No one 20 years of age and older was allowed into the Promised Land except for Joshua and Caleb. This shows that God did not hold those under 20 accountable for the sins that kept the adults barred from the land that represented salvation. Generally, adolescents do not have a complete grasp of the consequences of sin. This also shows that baptism should not take place among children, who have not matured enough to fully realize the seriousness of repentance and a changed life.

Numbers 32:11 Surely none of the men that came up out of Egypt, **from twenty years old and upward**, shall see the land which I swore unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob; because they have not wholly followed me:

Inquisition

Whose Authority—Christ & the Bible, or the Church & the Pope?

During the first ten persecutions of the church, confessing Christ's authority as supreme, above that of the Caesars, caused millions to suffer torture and death at the hands of the Roman Empire. Each year, to be granted a license to buy and sell, everyone in the Roman Empire would offer a pinch of incense to the Roman gods, and swear an oath of obedience to the authority of Caesar as supreme. The Christians were martyred for refusing to take this oath, by confessing, "Jesus Christ is the Lord."

During the dark ages, millions suffered torture and death at the hands of the Papacy because they believed Christ & the Bible's authority was supreme, above that of the Pope & the Church. The Papal inquisitors turned a deaf ear to the overwhelming scriptural evidence. They only listened for one thing, and one thing only. "Will you recant?" In order to save their lives, men were required to swear an oath of obedience to the authority of the Church & the Pope as supreme. For centuries no one in Europe could buy or sell without taking that oath. Whose Authority—Christ & the Bible, or the Church & the Pope? Millions who trusted in Christ were tortured and killed.

To which Martin Luther responded at the Diet of Worms:

"Since your most serene majesty and your highnesses require of me a simple, clear, and direct answer, I will give one, and it is this: I cannot submit my faith either to the pope or to the council, because it is clear that they have fallen into error and even into inconsistency with themselves. If, then, I am not convinced by proof from Holy Scripture, or by cogent reasons, if I am not satisfied by the very text I have cited, and if my judgment is not in this way brought into subjection to God's word, I neither can nor will retract anything; for it cannot be either safe or honest for a Christian to speak against his conscience. Here I stand. I cannot do otherwise. God help me. Amen."

Keys of the Kingdom—Part 1.

By David Michael Curtis.

"The Keys of the Kingdom—Part 1" is a document written by David Michael Curtis, which discusses the concept of the "Keys of the Kingdom" from a religious perspective, specifically challenging the Roman Catholic interpretation. Here's a summary of the key points:

- **Scriptural Basis:** The document examines Matthew 16 and its interpretation, questioning the traditional Roman Catholic view of Peter's role.
- **Peter's Role:** This chapter discusses whether Peter is the "rock" upon which the Church is built, whether he holds the "Keys of the Kingdom," and his authority to forgive sins. It also discusses the concept of the Apostolic See, including the Cardinals and the Pope.
- **Jesus as the Door:** The document explores the metaphor of Jesus as the door, referencing Revelation 3:20, John 10, and the Sermon on the Mount.
- **Keys to the Door:** It suggests that the "keys" involve asking, seeking, and knocking, rather than a literal transfer of authority.
- **Roman Catholic Narrative:** The document challenges the Roman Catholic narrative of Peter's succession and the papacy, questioning whether Peter handed the keys to Linus and the subsequent line of Popes.
- **Historical Evidence:** It presents historical evidence suggesting that Peter was martyred around 66 AD and that James led the early Church in Jerusalem. It also argues that Jewish Christians, not Peter, founded the churches in Rome and that Peter arrived in Rome later.
- **Peter's Absence in Rome:** The document argues that Peter was not in Rome during various periods, including when Paul wrote the Book of Romans and during Paul's imprisonment.
- **Early Church Establishment in Rome:** This chapter highlights that churches in Rome were established before Peter's arrival and had their own elders and deacons.
- **Debunking Roman Catholic Tradition:** The document aims to debunk the Roman Catholic tradition that Peter lived in Rome for 25 years and served as its first Bishop.
- **Fictional Narrative:** It argues that the idea of Peter founding the church in Rome and passing on the keys is a fictional narrative.
- **Church Fathers:** The document expresses skepticism towards the writings of the Church Fathers, suggesting they may have been influenced by Gnostic beliefs and sought to establish their authority.
- **Forged Donation of Constantine:** It mentions the forged Donation of Constantine, which the papacy used to claim ownership of the Western Roman Empire.
- **Papal Revisions of History:** It provides the example of the Assumption of Mary as a papal revision of history.

In essence, the document presents an argument against the traditional Roman Catholic view of Peter's authority and the succession of the papacy, using scriptural and historical evidence to support its claims.

Dear Friends,

The Keys of the Kingdom is a significant topic for Roman Catholics, originating from Matthew Chapter 16. Today, I'd like to guide you through the concept of the Keys of the Kingdom.

Examining the Scriptural Basis: Matthew 16 and Its Interpretation.

It's dangerous to build a doctrine on only one or two verses from the Holy Bible, and that's exactly the case we have here. A key verse in the Roman Catholic perspective is, "Whoever's sins you remit will be remitted; whoever's sins you retain will be retained." Now, if the entire New Testament consisted of just these two verses, one might argue that the Roman Catholic Church has a strong case regarding the Keys of the Kingdom. We also need to consider whether Peter is indeed the rock upon which the Church is built, which introduces a third critical verse.

The Question of Peter's Role: Rock, Keys, and Forgiveness.

So, is Peter the rock? Does he hold the Keys of the Kingdom? Is he responsible for deciding who to forgive and who not to forgive? This leads us to the concept of the Apostolic See, which becomes quite complex. For instance, all Cardinals are regarded as apostles, and the Vatican is considered the Apostolic See. The Pope sits in Peter's seat.

The Apostolic See: Cardinals, the Vatican, and the Pope.

Let's dive deeper into this topic. In Revelation 3:20, Jesus states that He stands at the door and knocks. In John Chapter 10, Jesus refers to Himself as the door. During the Sermon on the Mount, He encourages us with the words, "Knock, and it will be opened to you." The metaphor of a door signifies what stands between you and God. On one side, Jesus is knocking; on the other, He awaits your knock as well. He promises that if you knock, the door will be opened.

Jesus as the Door: Revelation 3:20, John 10, and the Sermon on the Mount.

Now, let's discuss the keys to this door. One element of the keys is the action of knocking. This is also encompassed in the phrase "ask, seek, and knock." If you ask, you will receive; if you seek, you will find; if you knock, it will be opened to you. So, we have three essential elements to the keys of the Kingdom: ask, seek, and knock.

The Keys to the Door: Asking, Seeking, and Knocking.

According to the Roman Catholic Church's narrative, the Keys of the Kingdom are with Jesus Christ. The belief is that Jesus handed these keys to Peter, who then passed them to Linus. They have been

transferred down through the line of Popes to the present day with Pope Francis. However, there are many assumptions underlying this belief.

The Roman Catholic Narrative: Peter's Succession and the Papacy.

Historically, we know that Peter was martyred around 66 AD, around the same time as the Apostle Paul. It's important to note that, as stated in Acts 15, the first leader of the Council in Jerusalem was not Peter but James. Therefore, the leadership of the early Church in Jerusalem actually began with James, not Peter.

Historical Evidence: Peter's Martyrdom and James' Leadership in Jerusalem.

Let's examine whether Peter handed the keys to Linus. In the Book of Romans, the Apostle Paul expresses his desire to visit the church in Rome. He wanted to meet the Christians there, even though there were already house churches in the city. It's important to note that Paul had never visited Rome, and he did not establish these churches. In Chapter 16, Paul provides a lengthy list of salutations to various church members in Rome; however, the Apostle Peter is not mentioned.

Peter and Linus: A Closer Look at the Succession Claim.

Historically, it is known that the house churches in Rome were founded not by Paul or Peter but by Jewish Christians who were present in Jerusalem during Pentecost.

Jewish Christians Role: The Founder of the Churches in Rome.

Around 66 AD, Peter arrived in Rome, where churches had existed for over thirty years. To suggest that Peter founded the church in Rome is akin to claiming that the War of 1812 against the Native Americans was what led the United States to declare its independence in 1776. House churches in Rome were formed in 33 AD by Jewish Christians who were in Jerusalem during Pentecost. Peter was in Jerusalem when the churches in Rome were being formed and only arrived in Rome after 66 AD.

Peter's Arrival in Rome: A Later Development.

Additionally, it was not Peter who laid hands on the first elders or appointed them Bishops or elders. Instead, it was Jewish Christians who were in Jerusalem during Pentecost who appointed them. The idea that Peter started the church in Rome and handed over the keys to Linus is based on shaky foundations. These narratives, often repeated by the papacy since the 7th century, lack support from historical evidence.

Setting the Record Straight.

Roman Catholicism tradition suggests that Peter served as the Bishop of Rome from 42 AD and lived there for 25 years until he died in the late 60s AD. According to this belief, after Peter's death,

his role as an apostle was passed on to Linus. However, let's examine the facts and clarify the situation.

Peter was still living in Jerusalem in 50 AD.

In Galatians 2, Paul outlines a timeline of his journey. He spent three years at Mount Sinai and then visited Jerusalem 14 years later, where he encountered James, John, and Peter. Jesus died and was resurrected in April 33 AD. When we add 17 years, we arrive at 50 AD. Peter's continued residence in Jerusalem in 50 AD disproves the notion that he had been living in Rome since 42 AD. Thus, we can confidently conclude that Peter did not live in Rome before 50 AD. **Now, let's expand our discussion of Peter's absence from Rome to cover the period following 58 AD.**

Peter's Absence in Romans 56 and 58 AD.

The Book of Romans was written between 56 and 58 AD. When we compare the list of salutations in Romans 16, we notice that Peter's name is absent. If Peter were the leader of Rome, it would be odd for Paul to neglect to greet him. If Peter had not been living in Rome at that time, it would have clarified why Paul did not mention him. Therefore, we can confidently conclude that Peter did not reside in Rome before 58 AD. **Now, let's expand our discussion of Peter's absence from Rome to cover the period beyond 62 AD.**

Peter's Absence During Paul's Imprisonment in Rome, 60-62 AD.

Many of Paul's letters were written while he was under house arrest in Rome. We know this because, at the conclusion of his letters, he indicates where they were written and by whom. Often, in the closing verses, greetings from those sitting in prison with Paul are conveyed; for example, someone will say, "So-and-so says hi."

Peter's Absence During Paul's First Imprisonment

Notably, Peter is not mentioned in any of the concluding remarks of Paul's epistles. This absence indicates that Peter was not with Paul between 60 and 62 AD. Paul was released from prison in 62 AD, continued his journeys, and was later imprisoned a second time, during which he was martyred. Peter did not arrive in Rome until after Paul's second imprisonment.

Early Church Establishment in Rome

This suggests that Peter did not arrive in Rome until about three decades after the churches had already been established, shortly after Pentecost, as described in Acts 2. Each house church in Rome had its elders and deacons. The extent of their establishment is evident in Romans 16, which contains more greetings than any other epistle.

The Arrival of Strangers in Rome After Pentecost

Acts 2:8-11 And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

Strangers in Rome heard the gospel and were baptized. They continued in the Apostles' doctrine and later returned home to establish house churches, just as they had seen in Jerusalem.

Growth of House Churches in Rome

Acts 2:46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart,¹

There were many Christians in Rome at that time, well before Paul wrote the Book of Romans, which he composed sometime between 56 and 58 AD. The detailed greetings to numerous individuals in the letter indicate that these churches had already been established decades earlier, providing ample time for their growth.

Nero's Persecution and Peter's Late Arrival

Nero began persecuting Christians in 64 AD, shortly after Paul was released from his first imprisonment. Unfortunately, many of the individuals Paul had greeted in Romans 16 were likely martyred before he returned for his second imprisonment and eventual martyrdom. Peter was not present during these events, as he did not arrive in Rome until after they had occurred. Linus's appointment as an elder in 67 AD is certainly not the first case of an elder in Rome following Peter. Many elders and deacons were likely put to death by Emperor Nero during this time.

Debunking the Roman Catholic Tradition

Note: We have just thoroughly debunked the Roman Catholic tradition that claims Peter lived in Rome for 25 years, starting in 42 AD until he died in 66 AD. At no point during this period did Peter reside in Rome. **Next, let's expand the discussion of Peter's absence from Rome to include the period after 66 AD.**

Peter's Absence During Paul's Imprisonment in Rome, 66 AD.

Paul wrote his final letters just before his martyrdom, and interestingly, Peter is not mentioned in any of them. If Peter had been imprisoned alongside him, Paul likely would have told Timothy, "By the way, Peter says hi." This again suggests that Peter's arrival in Rome was after 66 AD. We find no support in the scriptures indicating that Peter was in Rome before this late date.

The event that brought Peter to Rome was likely similar to what brought Paul to Rome the first time. It is probable that Peter was arrested elsewhere in the empire and sent to Rome to be tried by Nero. Under these circumstances, Peter would not have had the freedom to establish any churches in Rome, as he was in prison awaiting his execution.

The prison where both Paul and Peter were held still exists today, and tourists visiting Rome often explore this historic site. This prison was depicted in art from the 3rd century, and the modern structure closely resembles its appearance from that time. The only notable alteration is the addition of a staircase that allows visitors to access the prison. In contrast, the original prison only had a hole in the ceiling through which prisoners were lowered.

Suppose Peter was indeed in Rome, as several accounts assert. In that case, it is essential to recognize that the early Church Fathers likely embellished this story, leading to the widespread belief that Peter lived in Rome for many years. Based on our understanding of the Roman tradition concerning Peter and the fact that none of it stands up to scrutiny, it is clear that Peter was not actually in Rome for long; his time there was likely just a brief period shortly before his execution. This timeframe extends until after Paul wrote his final epistles around 66 AD, just prior to his martyrdom. Had Peter already been imprisoned alongside Paul when those letters were written, Paul would have surely included a salutation from Peter to Timothy.

The Early Churches in Rome.

It can be confidently stated that the churches in Rome were already established at this time, more than three decades before Linus became a bishop. The roles of bishop and elder are considered to be the same office. There were several churches in Rome, and each of them appointed a bishop or elder, along with a deacon. Multiple elders or bishops existed in the city even before Linus was appointed in 67 AD. Many elders were likely martyred under Nero, as his persecution in Rome began in 64 AD. Consequently, many new elders had to be appointed to replace those who had been martyred, and Peter did not appoint any of them. The book of Revelation indicates that there are only 12 apostles. When Paul and Peter died, they did not pass on their titles of apostles to any of the elders in the churches of Rome. Instead, as elders in these churches were martyred, new elders were appointed to replace them. This represents an elder succession, not an apostolic succession.

Peter's Arrival and the Existing Church Structure.

Historically, the first mention of Peter in Rome dates to around the time of his martyrdom in 66 AD. By the time Peter arrived in Rome, the churches there were already at least three decades old and had established elders and deacons. At that time, there wasn't a single bishop with greater authority than the others, and none of those bishops were appointed by Peter when he first came to Rome.

1 Corinthians 1-3 teaches that the house churches started by Peter are not superior or more authentic than those begun by Paul and Apollos. For instance, if Peter established one church and

appointed Linus as its leader, it wouldn't imply uniqueness or superiority. There were other churches and other elders. Paul addressed this issue, noting that the house churches established by Peter were not the "one true church" in Corinth, labeling all the other churches as "separated brethren." No, Paul said all the churches in Corinth were equal. The same principle applies to the churches in Rome, even if Peter started one of them.

However, it is unlikely that Peter ever founded a church in Rome or ordained Linus as an elder. Even if he had, it is reasonable to assume that Peter ordained numerous other elders in various cities prior to his arrest and execution in Rome. All these elders were equal in rank, both according to Christ and to Peter.

1 Peter 5:1-3 The elders which are among you **I exhort, who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, **not by constraint**, but willingly; **not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind; **Neither as being lords over God's heritage**, but being ensamples to the flock.

The Fictional Narrative from the Papacy.

The papacy would like us to accept the church tradition that there was only one church in Rome, claiming that Peter served as its bishop since the church's founding in 42 AD. According to this tradition, he was the shepherd of the Church of Rome for 25 years until his martyrdom and death in 66 AD. They would love to suggest there were cardinals and bishops under Peter, as well as Roman Catholic priests performing Mass and hearing confessions, with statues of Mary and the apostles being venerated by the faithful. However, the papacy cannot assert that all these practices originated at the beginning of the church, as historians would challenge this. It is a well-documented fact that many of these practices developed later on.

In 33 AD, Jewish Christians in Jerusalem on Pentecost returned to Rome and established several house churches. Peter remained in Jerusalem until at least 50 AD, which is clearly shown in Galatians 2, where Paul recounts traveling to Jerusalem 17 years after his conversion to meet with Peter, James, and John. In 56-58 AD, when Paul composed the book of Romans, Peter's name is absent from the salutations and greetings found in Romans 16. The belief that Peter was the pope residing in Rome from 42 to 66 AD is a fictional tradition of the Roman Catholic Church.

The Book of Revelation and Miracles.

Revelation 13 tells us that the beast, often referred to as the lamb-like beast, performs miracles. Commentaries from several centuries ago, which are available in most Bible apps, suggest that these miracles were manifested through the stories fabricated by Roman Catholicism. Throughout its history, there are countless fabricated accounts of miracles attributed to its canonized saints. After all, a saint must perform a miracle in order to be canonized.

The Nature of Catholic Miracles.

The nature of these miracles differs significantly from the ones we read about in the Bible. Roman Catholicism has a documented history of promoting fables and authenticating relics. For example, it is said that if all the nails said to belong to the true cross in Spain alone were brought together into one place, their total would be innumerable. However, Roman Catholics were expected to believe that every single nail came from the cross on which Jesus was crucified.

"Lying Wonders."

It's important to clarify that the Bible refers to these as "lying wonders." They are considered lying wonders because they never actually occurred; they are based entirely on falsehoods that Roman Catholics were expected to accept as truth.

Early Fabricated Miracle Stories.

The earliest fabricated miracle story I've encountered is the martyrdom of Petula. It's a remarkable tale, and while I wish it were true, the ending contradicts clear teachings in scripture. What's crucial for us to understand is that religious leaders have been spreading falsehoods about miracles performed by canonized saints since at least the second and third centuries.

Selective Quotes from Early Church Fathers.

Additionally, there are selective quotes from early church fathers that are often used to establish the supremacy of the Bishop of Rome. The deception lies in the fact that modern scholars reading these quotes tend to assume that these church fathers were genuine Christians, which leads them to trust these quotes. However, these men sought positions of authority that did not exist during the lifetimes of Peter and Paul. Paul warned that after his departure, grievous wolves would come in from among them, seeking to make disciples for themselves. The early church fathers fit this description, as they rose within the church and positioned themselves as authorities, requiring all churches to accept their doctrines and follow them as disciples.

A Call for Skepticism Towards Church Fathers.

I urge you to approach the writings of the Church Fathers with a healthy skepticism. Do not be gullible; do not assume that their writings should be taken at face value. Be open to the possibility that these figures could be the "wolves in sheep's clothing" that Christ and Paul warned about. We know that many Church Fathers held Gnostic beliefs, and the Gnostics were the antichrists that the Apostle John cautioned against in his epistles.

The Existence of an Organized Enemy.

I firmly believe that there has been a militant and organized enemy of the Church from the very beginning, even while the New Testament was being written. I believe in the existence of the devil,

who fell from heaven and possesses a higher intelligence than you and I do. Satan has been involved throughout history and has a much broader perspective of earthly events because he has observed them. I consider Satan to be the ultimate mastermind, a general capable of strategizing war plans intended to unfold over centuries. He operates through a militarized and organized body on Earth that follows his instructions. The Bible warns us that Satan can transform himself into an angel of light and that his ministers can masquerade as ministers of righteousness.

The Parable of the Tares.

I believe in Jesus's parable about the enemy who came in the middle of the night and sowed tares among the wheat. I think the devil and his ministers have been infiltrating and influencing Church history since its inception. If even a small portion of what I say is true, it would not be surprising to find that some Church Fathers were actually Gnostics who planted ideas in their writings to cultivate more power among future leaders, including subsequent Church Fathers and Cardinals who could leverage their authority. It is entirely plausible that monks could have modified the writings of the Church Fathers by adding paragraphs or altering content. Therefore, I do not believe we should be gullible or assume that any sentence we find in these writings genuinely represents divine inspiration or true Christianity. These men might have covertly been enemies infiltrating the Church.

Paul's Warning About Infiltration.

Before you dismiss this as a conspiracy, remember that this is precisely what Paul warned would happen after his death—that enemies would infiltrate the Church from within. Simply put, we should not believe every spirit, not because there are many false prophets in the world, but because they invoke the name of Jesus and use familiar terms like grace and faith. John refers to these individuals as antichrists. The antichrists were already a plague when John wrote his epistles, which is why I find it unsurprising that Church Fathers began appearing shortly after the deaths of both John and Paul. All of this makes sense to me, as I see a fulfillment of the biblical warnings in early Church history, where men rose to significant power and authority in ways that did not exist while the apostles were alive.

The Church Fathers' Fight Against Heresy.

One might wonder how the Church Fathers fought against heresy. It is essential to understand that this struggle helped them gain even greater authority and cemented their positions as leaders in Christianity. Have you ever heard of a fixed prize fight? Powerful individuals sometimes stage events to convince the population that they deserve their authority. Whether this happened deliberately or innocently throughout history is up for debate. Still, the result remains the same: these Church Fathers gained greater power and authority, establishing permanent roles that did not exist during the apostles' time.

A Personal Belief About a "Fixed Fight."

I believe it was a fixed fight, akin to a prize fight where one boxer is paid to lose the match. You are welcome to disagree with me; I acknowledge that I cannot prove my theory. However, I recognize how devious secret societies can be, so I do not put it past them. One of their most effective tactics is to control both sides of a conflict to predetermine the outcome, thereby establishing new power.

Addressing Potential Objections.

I can already hear someone objecting by saying that the church fathers loved God, and it's evident because they wrote an enormous amount—up to 1,000,000 pages. However, in recent years, it has come to light that many well-known evangelicals have published books that homosexuals and atheists ghostwrote. I'm not joking. Notable figures like Chuck Colson, David Jeremiah, John Ankerberg, Hal Lindsey, and even Billy Graham have used ghostwriters.

The Gnostic Gospels.

Have you ever heard of the Gnostic Gospels or the so-called "lost" Gnostic Gospels? In the second and third centuries, new gospels were written by the Gnostics, who were often labeled as antichrists. Historically, this is a well-documented fact, but most Christians need not worry about it, as these texts were largely fictional, using familiar Christian names to promote their forgeries. At that time, Christians mostly ignored these writings, and they were not utilized in any house churches. This is why they were lost; no one kept copies of them or chose to purchase them.

The Early Production of Questionable Christian Material.

My point is that, as early as the second century, writings resembling Christian material were already being produced by recognized antichrists, which the apostles had warned about. Additionally, many well-known "Church Fathers" were formerly Stoics, Gnostics, and Manicheans who later achieved significant power within Christianity. Is it possible that there were still wolves in sheep's clothing among them? Are you even open to the idea that their fight against heretics was staged, that their writings may have been ghostwritten, and that this was merely a strategy to establish their power and authority over Christianity?

The Sophistication of Alternative Belief Systems.

Consider Mormonism, Jehovah's Witnesses, Seventh-day Adventism, and Roman Catholicism. Each of these belief systems is deeply thought out. What we find in the writings of the Church Fathers is also carefully considered. However, I suggest that antichrists and false prophets have developed equally deep and well-structured alternative gospels. Our experts—lawyers and Hollywood writers—can create scripts that are internally consistent, constructing entire fictional universes that are satisfying and convincing but ultimately fictitious.

A Personal Lack of Trust.

I do not trust the writings of the Church Fathers. I believe they represent the "wolves in sheep's clothing" that Paul warned would arise after his departure. Perhaps I have an overactive imagination or am just a misguided old man. We will find out on Judgment Day. Either these individuals will be inside the city or outside; we will see on that day. Now, let's refocus on the topic of today's letter.

The Forged Donation of Constantine: A Historical Fabrication.

For several centuries, the papacy relied on a forged document that it claimed was authored by Constantine. This document allegedly donated the entire Western Roman Empire to the Bishop of Rome. However, this document has since been proven to be a forgery, written in the 8th century, which is four centuries too late to be authentic. For a long time, the papacy used this document as evidence of its rightful ownership of Europe, demanding obeisance and service from all based on the false claim that Constantine had granted them these privileges.

Alongside this forgery was the fictional narrative that Peter founded the Church of Rome and that he held the keys to the Kingdom, passing them on to Linus. This succession continued with one bishop in Rome after another. However, this narrative is largely fictional. In fact, Peter did not establish the Church in Rome. Jewish Christians who were in Jerusalem during Pentecost did,

The Fictional Narrative: Peter as the Founder of the Church in Rome.

In his salutations in Romans 16, if Peter had truly been the first Bishop of Rome, you would expect Paul to greet him, but he does not mention Peter at all. Historical accounts also support this, as no credible historian claims that Peter founded the Church of Rome. Peter did not arrive in Rome until around 65 or 66 AD, around the same time Paul was martyred, and by then, the churches in Rome were already well established.

Paul's Salutations in Romans 16: The Absence of Peter.

Linus did not receive his bishopric from Peter. By the time Linus became an elder, there were already several churches in Rome, each with its elders. We do not know which house church Linus was an elder of, nor do we know who held that position before him in that church. It is important to clarify this historical narrative: Peter was not the first Bishop of Rome, nor did he pass this office on to Linus.

Papal Revisions of History: The Assumption of Mary.

Furthermore, for 18 centuries, historians testified that John and Mary went to Ephesus, where Mary died and was buried. However, in the 19th century, a pope claimed that Mary did not die but ascended directly to heaven. This is just one example of how the papacy has been known to rewrite history. Historical evidence strongly supports that Mary died in Ephesus and was buried there.

When the Pope speaks ex-cathedra, that doctrine is considered infallible and inerrant, and all Roman Catholics must believe it. Thus, the doctrine stating that Mary ascended to heaven without dying, proclaimed ex-cathedra, must be accepted, despite the long-standing historical fact that she died and was buried in Ephesus.

The True Church Founders in Rome: Jewish Christians and Linus.

It is a well-known and documented fact that Jewish Christians who were in Jerusalem during Pentecost founded the churches in Rome. Therefore, Peter did not start the churches in Rome, nor did he appoint any elders to those churches. The entire narrative about Peter founding the church in Rome and then passing the keys to a church elder named Linus is purely fictional.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Keys of the Kingdom—Part 2.

By David Michael Curtis.

The document "The Keys of the Kingdom—Part 2," by David Michael Curtis, discusses the concept of the "keys of the kingdom" and challenges the Roman Catholic Church's doctrine of apostolic succession.

Here are the key points:

- **Dating of Revelation:** The document argues that the Book of Revelation was likely written around 68 AD, before the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, and after Peter died in 66 AD.
- **Jesus Holds the Keys:** According to the document, Jesus, not Peter or any successor, holds the keys of life and death.
- **Apostolic Succession:** The document disputes the idea of apostolic succession from Peter, stating that succession was from elder to elder, not apostle to apostle. Linus, the first bishop of Rome, was an elder, not an apostle.
- **Early Church Structure:** The early church consisted of house churches led by elders, and Peter's churches were not more authoritative than those of Paul or Apollos. There were multiple bishops in Rome, not just one.
- **The Keys as the Gospel:** The document interprets the "keys" as the gospel message, which brings forgiveness of sins through belief, repentance, and baptism. Every baptized Christian can use these "keys."
- **Jesus as Judge:** The document emphasizes that Jesus, not Peter, is the judge of the living and the dead.
- **Critique of Roman Catholicism:** The document criticizes Roman Catholic doctrines such as papal authority, purgatory, and the idea that Peter is the gatekeeper to heaven. It also compares the Roman Catholic view of Peter to the Mormon view of Joseph Smith.
- **Authority of Baptism:** The document asserts that baptism in the name of Jesus Christ holds more authority than church councils or papal pronouncements.
- **Historical Perspectives:** The document mentions that historically, Reformers believed the papacy was the Antichrist, and it interprets the "beast" and "lamb-like beast" in Revelation as representing the papacy's secular and religious authority.
- **Emphasis on Jesus' Authority:** The document repeatedly emphasizes that Jesus has ultimate authority and that believers should place their faith in Him, not in the church hierarchy.
- **Invitation to Believe:** The document concludes with an invitation to believe in Jesus, repent, and be baptized for the forgiveness of sins. It warns against fearing earthly powers and encourages fearing God, who has power over both body and soul.

Dear Friends,

Philip Schaff is regarded as one of the most accomplished historians in history. He authored a detailed church history book, and in the introduction, he explained his historical stance that the Book of Revelation was written in the 90s AD, a view held by many. However, in his later years, he changed his mind. He became convinced that the Book of Revelation was written prior to the destruction of the temple and the fall of Jerusalem in 70 AD, estimating its composition around 68 AD.

Peter died in 66 AD. If the Book of Revelation was written around 68 AD, we must ask, where were the keys at that point? Who was holding them? In the message to the seven churches, Jesus states, "I hold the keys of life and death." If Peter had been holding the keys, were they handed off to Linus? According to Revelation, after Peter's death, Jesus himself is now holding the keys.

The Keys After Peter's Death: Jesus Holds the Keys.

Linus, the first bishop of Rome, passed the bishopric to the next bishop, and so forth. Peter was not an interim bishop; there was a direct succession from Linus to the next bishop. When Peter died, he did not pass anything along in terms of apostolic succession. Linus was not an apostle; he was an elder and a bishop. The terms "elder" and "bishop" refer to the same role. Therefore, the concept of apostolic succession does not apply in this case; what succeeded was one elder to the next, not one apostle to the next. The narrative presented by the Roman Catholic Church is fictional.

Apostolic Succession: Elder to Elder, Not Apostle to Apostle.

The first bishop was not an apostle; he was simply an elder. In the early church, there were no cardinals—only house churches. You can read about this in Romans 16, where Paul greets certain people within the church who met in the house of individuals. Additionally, we can examine 1 Corinthians 1-3, where we find house churches established by Paul, Peter, and Apollos.

The Early Church Structure: House Churches and Elders.

The question arises regarding whether the house churches started by Peter were more authoritative or authentic than those initiated by Apollos and Paul. Paul directly addresses this issue, stating that all these churches are equal. Peter's house churches were not more authoritative or authentic than those of Paul or Apollos.

The Timing of Revelation: Implications for Who Holds the Keys.

Revelation 1:18 *I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.*

The Book of Revelation was written in 68 AD after Peter was executed. By that time, Peter had been crucified upside down, and he did not pass down any keys to anyone in the Roman Catholic sense. According to the Book of Revelation, Jesus is the one holding those keys. The office of the Bishop

in Rome was not apostolic; it was simply that of an elder. The terms elder and bishop refer to the same office and do not equate to the office of an apostle. Peter did not pass a set of keys to an elder at his death. If he had, it would represent an elder succession, not an apostolic one.

Revelation 3:7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, **he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;**

The first bishop mentioned in the list of bishops in Rome is Linus. However, I want to highlight that he was not the only bishop in Rome. There were other house churches, each led by an elder, indicating that there were multiple bishops. These churches were established by Jewish Christians who were present in Jerusalem during Pentecost, with Linus being just one branch of a larger tree. Jewish Christians who were present in Jerusalem during Pentecost essentially started each branch of this metaphoric tree representing house churches in Rome, and each house church had its elder or bishop.

Multiple Bishops in Rome: Linus Among Others.

The issue of apostolic succession becomes more complicated when considering that for it to hold, the very first bishop would have to be the only bishop in Rome; there could be no other churches. Furthermore, it is important to emphasize that Peter was not the first elder in Rome, as he only came to the city around the mid-60s AD; thus, it is clear that he was not the one who started the churches in Rome. Instead, Jewish Christians present in Jerusalem during Pentecost returned to Rome, and each of them formed their house church.

The Question of Papal Authority During Peter's Lifetime.

Now, let's move along to the keys. What are the keys? Once you understand that the keys are not about apostolic succession but rather the gospel itself, you will see the truth. The gospel is the key that opens the door, introducing someone to the forgiveness of sins. Jesus said, "Whoever sins you forgive, they are forgiven, and whoever sins you retain, they are retained." Was Peter the only one who had this power, these keys? Absolutely not. In fact, every baptized Christian can use the same keys that Peter did: the keys of the gospel.

The Power of the Gospel: Forgiveness of Sins Through Belief and Baptism.

Here's how it works: You tell the story of the old rugged cross—how Jesus stood trial under Pontius Pilate, died for our sins according to Scripture, was buried, and resurrected. He ascended to heaven, and God accepted His sacrifice. This message atones for our sins. Everyone who hears, believes, repents, and gets baptized is forgiven of their sins. Those who hear but do not believe, do not repent, and do not get baptized remain in their sins.

The Two Groups: Forgiven and Not Forgiven.

The issue at hand is that there are people who are forgiven and those who are not. The Bible states that "whoever sins you retain, they shall be retained." When a person hears the gospel and is called to repent and get baptized, some will believe, and some will not. Those who believe will inherit eternal life, while those who do not will face condemnation. After someone shares the story of the old rugged cross, everyone will fall into one of two groups: those who are forgiven and those who are not.

Receiving Forgiveness: The Role of Water Baptism.

So, when do we receive forgiveness for our sins? It is through water baptism, a topic we have discussed in great detail over the last two weeks. What is the key to the Kingdom? Jesus said, "Unless you are born of water and the Spirit, you cannot see the Kingdom of God." Therefore, the key to the Kingdom is not a church tradition or hierarchy; it is being born of water and the Spirit. If you are born of water and the Spirit, you will have access to the Tree of Life and the right to enter the Kingdom of God.

The Key to the Kingdom: Being Born of Water and the Spirit.

It's crucial to understand that it is not the Pope, acting as a judge in the Vatican, who makes the decisions about who is saved and who is condemned. The Scriptures make it clear that Jesus is the one who judges the living and the dead, rather than Peter or any individual asserting to be his successor. Who will identify those on the right and those on the left? Is it Peter, or is it Jesus? It is the King, not a person occupying a throne in Rome, but the King seated on the heavenly throne, who renders that judgment.

Jesus as the Judge: Not Peter.

Peter himself stated that Jesus would judge the living and the dead, affirming that it is Jesus, not Peter, who serves as the judge of the whole world. He will divide the sheep from the goats, the wheat from the tares, and the saved from the lost. In every example in the Bible, it is Jesus who carries out this division. It is His word that judges the entire world; His teachings serve as a sharp two-edged sword, capable of penetrating our intentions and judging us accordingly.

Peter's Testimony: Jesus Will Judge the Living and the Dead.

The idea that Peter stands at a gate, requiring everyone to go through him to enter, is purely fictional. Interestingly, a similar story is told within the Mormon faith. According to the official writings of the Mormon Church, in order to enter God's Kingdom, one must go through Joseph Smith. In essence, Mormonism has adopted what Roman Catholicism did with Peter and applied it to Joseph Smith. I have documented evidence to support this claim.

The Fictional Gatekeeper: Peter and Joseph Smith Compared.

In the Mormon Church, no one can enter the Kingdom of God without Joseph Smith's approval. Likewise, in Roman Catholicism, nobody can enter without Peter's approval. Both narratives are fictional. What Peter truly had was the ability to share the message of the old rugged cross, calling people to repent and to be baptized for the forgiveness of sins and the gift of the Holy Spirit. At that moment, individuals either believed, repented, and got baptized, or they did not.

Peter's True Authority: Preaching the Gospel.

Through Peter's preaching and his call to repentance and baptism, he had the keys to the Kingdom. However, he did not have the authority to determine who would be saved or lost; he only had the authority to preach and share his eyewitness testimony. After making his call, it was no longer his choice. People either believed or did not, repented, or they did not and chose to be baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, or they did not. Those who believed, repented, and were baptized had their sins forgiven, while those who did not had their sins retained.

The Apostles' Role: Sharing the Gospel and Calling for Repentance.

This not only applied to Peter; all the apostles went out preaching the gospel, sharing their eyewitness testimonies, and calling people to repent and be baptized.

Overcoming Fear: The Authority of God's Love.

Do not fear even if the Pope declares you anathema, saying you are lost or condemned to hell. I do not fear such pronouncements because Romans Chapter 8 tells us that nothing, not even principalities or powers on Earth, can separate us from the love of God. No one on Earth has the authority to void the gospel of Jesus Christ, nor do they hold authority over the keys that Jesus possesses.

The Superior Authority of Jesus: Over Popes and Councils.

We can be assured that Jesus holds the keys to life and death and is the one standing at the door, knocking. Therefore, do not look to a Pope holding the keys; look to Jesus, who actually holds the keys. We can be certain that Jesus is the one in control. If Jesus forgives you, and if God forgives you, the apostle Paul asks in Romans who can stand against you. Who has greater authority, the Pope or God? Who has greater authority, the Pope or Jesus Christ? That is the crux of the issue. If God has justified you, then the Pope, along with all the Cardinals and church councils, can issue their threats and anathemas all day long, and it will not affect me. It does not scare me one bit.

Assurance and a Clear Conscience: Based on Christ's Sacrifice and Baptism.

It is stated in 1 John that perfect love casts out all fear, and that is the essence of what we are discussing. I have no fear of the popes, anathemas, or the Council of Trent despite the dozens of

anathemas issued. Why doesn't it worry me? Because I have a clear conscience. How did I achieve that good conscience? It's because Christ died for my sins and was resurrected. I heard this story, believed it, responded by repenting, and was baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

The Authority of Baptism: Greater Than Church Councils.

The papacy points to its Council of Trent, and I point to my baptismal certificate. I was baptized, and I believe that my baptism holds more authority than the Council of Trent. Why? Because the name of Jesus has more authority than any name on Earth. This is the teaching of Scripture. When I got baptized in the name of Christ, that name carried all authority in heaven and on Earth. Therefore, there is absolutely nothing anyone can do—no earthly principality or power—has more authority than Christ or His name. It's a done deal: I was baptized, I received the Holy Spirit, and I was sealed until the day of redemption by the Holy Spirit. There is nothing anyone on Earth can do, given all the combined powers of Earth because Jesus holds more authority.

Historical Perspectives: The Papacy and the Antichrist.

Historically, everyone in the Reformation believed that the papacy was the Antichrist. If that offends Roman Catholics, I am simply referring to historical perspectives. It is a known fact we cannot change the past; we can acknowledge it and move forward. This has been the position of all the Reformers—every single one of them—and I have quotes from all of them to prove they believed the papacy was the Antichrist. Furthermore, we can look to the Book of Revelation, chapter 13, where the commentaries generally agree that both the beast and the lamb-like beast represent the papacy. Both descriptions match every single aspect given about the beast and the lamb-like beast. The beast represents the secular authority of the papacy.

The Beast and the Lamb-like Beast: Secular and Religious Authority.

The lamb-like beast represents the religious authority of the papacy, which holds both secular and religious power. The papacy is the only institutional church that fits this description. It received a deadly wound, which was later healed. In 606 AD, the Byzantine emperor conferred the title of Supreme Bishop over all bishops to the Bishop of Rome. Twelve thousand one hundred sixty years later, the papacy received a deadly wound. At that time, the papacy controlled land known as the Papal States. The designation of the Pope as the Supreme Pontiff over all bishops began in 606 AD. Adding 1260 years, as the prophet indicates, brings us to the year the papacy lost the Papal States and received its deadly wound. This marked the point when the papacy ceased to be a secular authority. It remained without this power until 1929 when Mussolini granted the territory now known as the Vatican back to the papacy.

The Vatican as a Secular Entity: The Healing of the Deadly Wound.

The Vatican acts as a secular entity; this is why the Pope can address the United Nations. He is not just the Bishop of Rome; he is also the king of the Vatican. As the leader of the Roman Catholic

Church, he operates as both a religious and a secular leader of the empire known as the Vatican. For several decades, the papacy endured a deadly wound and lost all its Papal States. However, in 1929, it was restored as a nation and an empire, regaining its status as a secular power. Thus, the beast received a deadly wound, and since 1929, that wound has been healed.

Persecution of the Saints: A Historical Fact.

The papacy has had the power to persecute the Saints, and this is a historical fact that supports the argument identifying the papacy as the Antichrist. This topic could warrant an entire letter dedicated to identifying both the beast and the lamb-like beast, as well as the woman who rides the beast, representing the papacy.

The Beast from the Sea: Rome and the Transfer of Authority.

For now, I want to emphasize that the beast in Revelation 13:1 emerged from the sea and stood on the sand. This impressive beast received its seat and authority from the dragon, which symbolizes Rome and the Roman Empire. The seat of authority was transferred from the Roman emperors to the bishops of Rome, who ruled for 1260 years. This power stood upon the sand of the sea. What I am describing is a terrifying beast, with its blasphemous claims, built upon a foundation of sand.

The Sandy Foundation: Fictional Claims of Authority.

We have been demonstrating this sandy foundation from one angle to another, showing the many different ways we can illustrate that the authority claimed by the Roman Catholic Church is akin to Constantine's document—a complete work of fiction. This document wasn't written until the 8th century, and we know it has been verified as too late to be credible. This is a known fact: it was a fabricated document.

Historical Reality: James and Linus.

Historically, Jewish Christians who were present in Jerusalem during Pentecost founded the churches in Rome, and James was the leader of the church in Jerusalem; Peter remained in Jerusalem until at least 50 AD. When Peter was imprisoned and executed in Rome in 67 AD, the churches in Rome were at least three decades old. Furthermore, Linus was not an apostle; he was an elder, a bishop, and a presbyter. Peter did not appoint him as an elder in the Church of Rome—Jewish Christians who were present in Jerusalem during Pentecost did. Linus passed his elder seat to the next elder, and Peter had no role in that process.

Jesus Holds the Keys: Ultimate Authority.

The keys of the Kingdom are not in Peter's hands or the Pope's hands in the Vatican. Rather, Jesus is the one holding the keys. Jesus declared that He has all power in heaven and on earth. If you are a devout Roman Catholic, you ought to recognize that Jesus is the King of kings and that He

possesses all power. If someone else claims to have more power than Jesus, it is vital to acknowledge that Jesus has the ultimate authority.

Forgiveness Through Baptism: In the Name of Jesus.

We receive forgiveness of sins through water baptism in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. This forgiveness is applied in the name of Jesus Christ, whose name holds more authority than that of the Pope. If you are a faithful Roman Catholic, you should also recognize that the name of Jesus carries more authority than the Pope. Therefore, if a pope or a church council attempts to undermine Christ's authority, their claims are void and hold no authority whatsoever. They cannot override the authority of Christ, who occupies a position of greater power.

Salvation Through Faith and Confession: Washed in Jesus' Name.

Scripture teaches that if you believe that God raised Jesus from the dead and confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus Christ, you will be saved. We are taught that we are washed, justified, and sanctified in the name of Jesus and by the Holy Ghost. If you believe in the name of Jesus, you are washed and forgiven of all sin from which the law of Moses could not save or justify you.

Choosing Whom to Serve: Jesus or the Pope.

The question is: Do you believe in the name of Jesus, or do you fear the Pope or church councils? Which holds more authority: the name of Jesus or the church in Rome? At Mount Carmel, Elijah proclaimed, "If the Lord is God, serve Him; but if Baal is God, then serve him." I present you with Elijah's message: If Jesus is the King of kings, then serve Him.

The Claimed Authority of the Pope: A Triple Miter Crown.

If the Pope, wearing his triple miter crown and claiming to be the King of Heaven, Earth, and the underworld, is indeed the Lord, then serve him. Who is the King of Heaven? Is it Jesus or the Pope? The Pope, with that triple miter crown, asserts that he has the greatest authority in heaven. It is a doctrine of Roman Catholicism that the priest has more authority than Jesus; that when he performs an incantation over the bread, Jesus must obey the priest and become the flesh in that bread. In essence, it is taught that Jesus must submit to the priest.

The True King of Heaven: Jesus' Ultimate Power.

Who is the King of Heaven? Who has all power in Heaven and on earth? Jesus claims that He has all power. Do you believe Him? If you believe in Him, you have eternal life. If you don't believe in Him, and if you think the priest has more authority than Jesus or that the Pope has greater authority than Jesus, then serve him. We'll see how that works out on Judgment Day.

An Invitation to Believe: The Gospel and Baptism.

But if Jesus is Lord, serve Him. I invite you to hear the gospel, believe it, repent, and be baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. I urge you to believe in Jesus. If you believe that God raised Jesus from the dead, then get baptized in His name.

The Power of Jesus' Name: Cleansing and Perfection.

I encourage you to believe that His name has greater authority than the Pope and greater authority than the Council of Trent. His name washes away all your sins, forgives you, justifies you, sanctifies you, perfects you, and keeps you clean. It can present you blameless and unblemished in His sight at the second coming.

The Futility of Serving the Pope: Purgatory and Limited Grace.

Alternatively, you can choose to serve the Pope, who cannot forgive your sins. According to the doctrine of the Roman Catholic Church, how do I know? Even Pope John Paul II, despite being the Pope, is said to be suffering in purgatory today. This is in accordance with Roman Catholicism—despite the thousands of Masses said in his honor and Catholics praying for him around the world, he is still suffering in purgatory.

The Doctrine of Purgatory: A Different Gospel.

The doctrine of purgatory states that if you are Roman Catholic, that's where you will end up—and it lasts for a very long time. All the sacraments of the Roman Catholic Church only provide you with a tiny measure of grace. To enter God's Kingdom, you need 100% grace, but all the thousands of Masses, prayers of the rosary, indulgences, and relics only give you a small fraction of that—let's say .000001% of what you need. That's why you have to repeat these rituals over and over again. Ultimately, they cannot wash away your sins; you must go to purgatory to purge your sins. This is another gospel.

Jesus at the Door: The True Source of Forgiveness.

Jesus is standing at the door, knocking. He says He has the keys to life and death. We can be certain that Jesus holds these keys and has the authority to forgive us. However, we must believe in Him and trust that He is the head of the Church.

Choosing the Head of the Church: Jesus or the Pope.

We cannot serve two masters; we must choose who is truly the head of the Church. Is it Pope Francis, or is it King Jesus? The scripture is very clear: Jesus is the head of the Church. He has the keys and has been sitting on the throne for nearly 2,000 years. Jesus rose from the dead, while no Pope has ever risen from the dead. We know exactly where the Popes are buried, and we can visit their tombs in Rome. These are dead people who could not save themselves.

The Contrast with Other Religious Leaders: Buddha.

The same problem applies to Buddha. We know where Buddha's body parts are and can visit his remains, just as we can visit the bones of the Popes. They are dead; they have not been resurrected or ascended to heaven, and they could not save themselves. In contrast, Jesus rose from the grave, ascended to heaven, and is seated on the throne right now.

The Authority of the Throne in Heaven: Jesus' Supremacy.

Which has more authority: the throne in heaven or the one in Rome? This is not a difficult question to solve. Clearly, the throne in heaven has the greatest authority. If you believe in the name of Jesus and are baptized in His name, all of your sins are washed away—not just a tiny percentage over time through various sacraments. At water baptism, 100% of your sins are purged and cleansed. You are justified, sanctified, and perfected.

The Second Coming: Believers Transformed, Not in Purgatory.

At the second coming, instead of spending millions of years in purgatory, we will be changed and made like the angels, ready to meet Jesus in the clouds.

The Problem of Purgatory at the Second Coming: Absence of Believers.

That's a significant issue in Roman Catholicism. At the Second Coming, where are all the Roman Catholics? They are in purgatory, which means they are absent and not available. It's akin to calling someone and getting their voicemail, which says, "Sorry, this person is not available. Please leave a message at the tone." That's what purgatory represents at the Second Coming.

A Voicemail for Jesus: The Absurdity of Purgatory at the Return.

When Jesus returns for the Roman Catholics, he gets the voicemail: "Sorry, Pope John Paul II is not available; he's in purgatory. Please leave a message at the tone." So, Jesus leaves a message saying, "I came to earth with all the angels to get you, but apparently, you were busy in purgatory. Let me know when you get out, and in a few million years, I'll come back for you."

A Different Gospel: The Implications of Purgatory.

This illustrates a different interpretation of the Gospel according to Roman Catholicism.

The True Resurrection: No Purgatory, Instant Transformation.

At the second coming of Jesus, He doesn't receive a busy signal or a voicemail. He will call out with a loud voice, and the trumpet of God and the dead will be raised instantly. There is no purgatory. The dead will be transformed, made like the angels, and will rise to meet Jesus in the air right then and there. Jesus promised, "I'm coming back, and I'm going to take you to where I have been," as

stated in John 14. He will take those saints who are now angels into the city of God in heaven, where they will remain for 1,000 years.

Judgment Day: The Fate of the Wicked.

Afterward, there will be a judgment day. On that day, the condemned dead will be raised to face the judgment seat of Christ and will be cast alive into the lake of fire, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. At the end of this destruction of the wicked, a new heaven and a new earth will be created, and the City of God, the New Jerusalem, will descend from heaven to rest on earth.

The Severely Judged: Satan, the Beast, and Their Followers.

Before this can happen, there must be a judgment. The most severely judged will be Satan and his fallen angels. Following them, the most severely punished in the lake of fire, according to the Book of Revelation, will include the Beast, the false prophet, and everyone who received the mark of the Beast. These groups will face the harshest punishment on judgment day: the devil, his angels, the Beast, the false prophet, and those who received the mark of the beast.

The Hour of Salvation: Faith and Baptism in Jesus' Name.

Now is the hour of your salvation. Today is the day—don't put it off. There is salvation in the name of Jesus Christ. If you have faith in Him, step forward, walk into the water, and get baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Place your faith in Jesus, believing that He is on the throne in heaven right now and has all authority in heaven and on earth.

Fear God, Not Man: Jesus' Ultimate Power Over Body and Soul.

You don't need to fear the Beast or the false prophet, nor do you have to fear the devil. Yes, they have power and authority—God allowed them that authority. They can persecute the saints and even bring about death, but Jesus said, "Don't fear those who can kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, fear Him who can destroy both soul and body in hell." That's whom you should truly fear.

The Limited Power of the Vatican: Focus on Eternal Consequences.

Don't fear the Pope; the only power the Vatican has is over the body. Jesus has the power to destroy both body and soul in the lake of fire, where the most severely punished will be the Beast, the false prophet, and those who receive the mark of the Beast, along with the devil and his fallen angels. You don't want to find yourself in that group outside the city.

The Futility of Opposition to God: His Ultimate Supremacy.

You do not want to be part of that vast army as numerous as the sands of the sea. No matter how large that multitude is, they hold absolutely no power against God. God only needs to show His face to demonstrate His supremacy.

The Consuming Glory of God: Judgment Day and the End of the Universe.

Refer to Revelation 20:11. When God reveals His glory, the heavens and the earth will be consumed and vanish from existence. All He needs to do is show His face, and the entire universe will disappear. Peter states that the heavens and the earth will pass away, burning like an oven, and even the elements will be dissolved. Every element on the periodic table will be affected by the glory of God on Judgment Day. You do not want to be outside the city and witness this glory, as no one can see God's face and live. The entire universe will cease to exist afterward, and God will create a new heaven and a new earth. Only those within the city of God will be safe in this new creation.

The Terrifying Wrath of God: Fear Him Above All.

When God reveals His glory and pours out His wrath without mixture on the beast, the false prophet, and those who receive the mark of the beast, the prospect of martyrdom becomes terrifying. Therefore, I suggest that you should fear God more than anyone else on this Earth, more than what others can do to you. God's punishment will be far worse.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Last Rites

Be found in him, not having mine own righteousness

Philippians 3:8-9 Yea doubtless, and I count all things *but* loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them *but* dung, that I may win Christ, ¶ And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

Not by works of righteousness which we have done

Titus 3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

They sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law

Romans 9:31-32 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

The time of my departure is at hand, I have kept the faith

2 Timothy 4:6-7 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight, I have finished *my* course, I have kept the faith:

Last Rights.

By David Michael Curtis

David Michael Curtis wrote the file "Last Rights." It discusses the concept of last rites in relation to Christian beliefs about salvation, baptism, and deathbed conversions.

Here are the key points:

- **Last rites** are described as a practice where a person confesses their sins before dying and is promised forgiveness.
- The document emphasizes that **salvation comes through faith in Jesus Christ**, his death, burial, and resurrection, as well as repentance and water baptism.
- The **thief on the cross** is cited as an exception, as Jesus promised him paradise despite not being baptized, because he believed in Jesus. This is used to illustrate that while baptism is important when possible, faith is paramount.
- **Deathbed conversions** are acknowledged, but the document clarifies that these are different from last rites, which focus on confession to a priest.
- It is stressed that **salvation is through faith in Jesus**, not through the act of confession itself.
- The author emphasizes that they are not judging those who have received last rites but are clarifying the process of salvation according to their understanding of Christian teachings.

Dear Friends,

Last rites refer to the time when a person on their deathbed confesses their sins just before passing away. They are promised forgiveness, which brings them peace during their final moments. The gospel requires faith in Jesus' death, burial, and resurrection for the atonement of sins, followed by repentance and water baptism in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

The Exception of the Thief on the Cross.

An important example is the thief on the cross, who could not be baptized because he was crucified next to Christ. In this case, Jesus' baptism is imputed to the thief; essentially, Jesus was baptized on his behalf. While everyone should indeed be baptized, there are exceptions. If, like the thief on the cross, you find yourself in a situation where baptism is not possible—such as in prison

or on death row—you have the assurance from Jesus. He said to the thief, "I'm telling you today that you will be with me in Paradise." This promise was made on the very day of Jesus' crucifixion when he was suffering immensely.

The Importance of Baptism When Possible.

Jesus promised the thief paradise, demonstrating that His baptism is sufficient for such cases. However, this does not mean that others can disregard baptism. If you have the opportunity to be baptized, it is essential to do so. Refusing baptism is an act of rebellion against Christ and a disobedience to the gospel.

Deathbed Experiences and Conversions.

Now, what about individuals on their deathbeds? I have personally been with over 36 people who were dying. As they approach death—either from old age, natural causes, or in the last 10 to 15 minutes—they often begin to exhibit what is known as a "death rattle." This involves deep and rapid inhalation and exhalation, indicating that their death is imminent and irreversible. In these situations, I have comforted those who are dying and shared the gospel with them, asking if they believe in Jesus and assuring them that Jesus' death on the cross atones their sins.

The Difference Between Deathbed Conversions and Last Rites.

Yes, deathbed conversions do occur, and I have witnessed and assisted in them. However, these experiences do not equate to last rites. Last rites typically teach that a person is forgiven through confession to a priest. It's important to understand that we are not saved by confession; we are saved by faith in Jesus Christ.

The Faith of the Thief on the Cross.

The thief on the cross was saved because he expressed faith in Jesus, saying, "Remember me when you enter your Kingdom." He believed that Jesus was the King of the Jews despite the division surrounding His identity. Some people believed in Him, while others mocked Him. The thief was among those who acknowledged Jesus as the King.

Salvation Through Faith, Not Last Rites.

So, do last rites lead to salvation? The emphasis is on confessing sins before death rather than on faith in Christ. I am not judging those who have died after receiving the last rites; I cannot judge. I merely want to clarify this process. If they died believing that Jesus atoned for their sins, then they have eternal life.

Mary Saves?

“Taken up to heaven she (Mary) did not lay aside this saving office but by her manifold intercession continues to bring us the gifts of eternal salvation...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #969

“Being obedient she (Mary) became the cause of salvation for herself and for the whole human race.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #494

“She (Mary) is inseparably linked with the saving work of her Son.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #1172

Neither is there salvation in any other

Acts 4:12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

There is none other name under heaven

Acts 4:12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

No man cometh unto the Father, but by me

John 14:6 Jesus saith unto him, *I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

By me if any man enter in, he shall be saved

John 10:9 *I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.*

Beside me there is no saviour

Isaiah 43:11 *I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.*

Hosea 13:4 Yet *I am* the LORD thy God from the land of Egypt, and thou shalt know no god but me: for *there is* no saviour beside me.

The God of my rock; in him will I trust

2 Samuel 22:3 The God of my rock; in him will I trust: *he* is my shield, and the horn of my salvation, my high tower, and my refuge, my saviour; thou savest me from violence.

JESUS: shall save his people from their sins

Matthew 1:21 And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

A Saviour, which is Christ the Lord

Luke 2:11 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

Christ, the Saviour of the world

John 4:42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

A Prince and a Saviour

Acts 5:31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

His promise unto Israel, a Saviour, Jesus

Acts 13:23 Of this man's seed hath God according to *his* promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus:

Our Saviour Jesus Christ

2 Timothy 1:10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

The Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour

Titus 1:4 To Titus, *mine* own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

Titus 3:6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;

The Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world

1 John 4:14 ¶ And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world.

God and our Saviour Jesus Christ

2 Peter 1:1 ¶ Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ

2 Peter 1:11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

The Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ

2 Peter 2:20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ

2 Peter 3:18 But grow in grace, and *in* the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him *be* glory both now and for ever. Amen.

Ye were redeemed with the precious blood of Christ

1 Peter 1:18-19 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

The Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

Philippians 3:20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

Mary: Saved from Birth?

“By the grace of God Mary remained free of every personal sin her whole life long.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #493

“Espousing the divine will for salvation wholeheartedly, without a single sin to restrain her, she gave herself entirely to the person and to the work of her Son...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #494

“Mary is the most excellent fruit of redemption (SC 103): from the first instant of her conception, she was totally preserved from the stain of original sin and she remained pure from all personal sin throughout her life.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #508 (See also #722)

“Through the centuries the Church has become ever more aware that Mary, ‘full of grace’ through God, was redeemed from the moment of her conception.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #491

“The Church’s devotion to the Blessed Virgin is intrinsic to Christian worship.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #971

He hath made him to be sin for us

2 Corinthians 5:21 For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

All have sinned

Romans 3:23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

There is none righteous, no, not one

Romans 3:10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

Romans 3:12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

The scripture hath concluded all under sin

Galatians 3:22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

“My spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour”

Luke 1:46-47 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

Who is my mother?

Matthew 12:48-50 But he answered and said unto him that told him, *Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?* And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, *Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.*

Luke 11:27-28 ¶ And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, *Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.* But he said, *Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

There is not a just man upon earth, that sinneth not

Ecclesiastes 7:20 For *there is not* a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

Death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned

Romans 5:12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned

By the righteousness of one

Romans 5:18-19 Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.:

Mary: Perpetual Virgin?

“And so the liturgy of the Church celebrates Mary as Aeiparthenos, the ‘Ever-virgin.’”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #499

“Through the centuries the Church has become ever more aware that Mary, ‘full of grace’ through God, was redeemed from the moment of her conception.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #491

“The Church has always understood these passages as not referring to other children of the Virgin Mary. In fact James and Joseph, ‘brothers of Jesus,’ are the sons of another Mary, a disciple of Christ...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #500

Is not this the carpenter's son?

Matthew 13:55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

Mark 6:3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

James the Lord's brother

Galatians 1:19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother.

Psalms 119:160 ¶ Thy word *is* true *from* the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments *endureth* for ever.

Mary: Source of Holiness?

“From the Church he learns the example of holiness and recognizes its model and source in the all-holy Virgin Mary...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #2030

The low estate of his handmaiden

Luke 1:48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

Thou only art holy

Revelation 15:4 Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for *thou only art holy*: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.

Psalms 99:5 Exalt ye the LORD our God, and worship at his footstool; *for he is holy*.

Psalms 99:3 Let them praise thy great and terrible name; *for it is holy*.

The LORD our God is holy

Psalms 99:9 Exalt the LORD our God, and worship at his holy hill; for the LORD our God *is holy*.

Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts

Isaiah 6:3 And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, *is the LORD of hosts*: the whole earth *is* full of his glory.

He which hath called you is holy

1 Peter 1:15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

Be ye holy; for I am holy

1 Peter 1:16 Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

Leviticus 11:44 For I *am* the LORD your God: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I *am* holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

I will not give my glory unto another

Isaiah 48:11 For mine own sake, *even* for mine own sake, will I do *it*: for how should *my name* be polluted? and I will not give my glory unto another.

For thou hast created all things

Revelation 4:11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

I am the LORD, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your King

Isaiah 43:15 I *am* the LORD, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your King.

Mary: The Intercessor?

“Therefore the Blessed Virgin is invoked in the Church under the titles of Advocate, Helper, Benefactress, and Mediatrix.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #969

We have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous

1 John 2:1 ¶ My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

Behold, God is mine helper

Psalms 54:4 ¶ Behold, God is mine helper: the Lord is with them that uphold my soul.

The Lord is my helper

Hebrews 13:6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

The LORD delivereth him

Psalms 34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD delivereth him out of them all.

One mediator between God and men, Christ Jesus

1 Timothy 2:5 For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

He is the mediator of the new testament

Hebrews 9:15 ¶ And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Christ is entered into heaven itself, to appear in the presence of God for us

Hebrews 9:24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:

He is able also to make intercession for them

Hebrews 7:25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Christ that died, also maketh intercession for us

Romans 8:34 Who is he that condemneth? *It is* Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

He maketh intercession for the saints

Romans 8:27 And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to *the will of* God.

Through him we have access by one Spirit unto the Father

Ephesians 2:18 For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

In whom we have boldness and access

Ephesians 3:11-12 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

Jesus Christ, and him crucified

1 Corinthians 2:2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

He is the mediator of a better covenant

Hebrews 8:6 ¶ But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

Mary: Recipient of Prayer?

“By asking Mary to pray for us, we acknowledge ourselves to be poor sinners and we address ourselves to the ‘Mother of Mercy,’ the All- Holy One... May she welcome us as our mother at the hour of our passing to lead us to her son, Jesus, in paradise.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #2677

“From the most ancient times the Blessed Virgin has been honored with the title of ‘Mother of God,’ to whose protection the faithful fly in all their dangers and needs...”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #971

Call unto me, and I will answer thee

Jeremiah 33:3 Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.

Call upon me in the day of trouble

Psalms 50:15 And **call upon me in the day of trouble**: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me.

I will call upon thee: for thou wilt answer me

Psalms 86:6-7 Give ear, O LORD, unto my prayer; and attend to the voice of my supplications. In the day of my trouble **I will call upon thee: for thou wilt answer me.**

He shall call upon me, and I will answer him

Psalms 91:15 He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: *I will be* with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.

He is their strength in the time of trouble

Psalms 37:39 But the salvation of the righteous *is* of the LORD: *he is* their strength in the time of trouble.

O LORD, our salvation also in the time of trouble

Isaiah 33:2 O LORD, be gracious unto us; we have waited for thee: be thou their arm every morning, our salvation also in the time of trouble.

The LORD will deliver him in time of trouble

Psalms 41:1 ¶ To the chief Musician, A Psalm of David. Blessed is he that considereth the poor: the LORD will deliver him in time of trouble.

The LORD, shall sustain thee

Psalms 55:22 Cast thy burden upon the LORD, and he shall sustain thee: he shall never suffer the righteous to be moved.

He shall hear my voice

Psalms 55:17 Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud: and he shall hear my voice.

The LORD is nigh unto all them that call upon him

Psalms 145:18 The LORD is nigh unto all them that call upon him, to all that call upon him in truth.

Let your requests be made known unto God

Philippians 4:6 Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

Come unto me, and I will give you rest.

Matthew 11:28 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

As for me, I will call upon God

Psalms 55:16 ¶ As for me, I will call upon God; and the LORD shall save me.

Mary: Queen Over All Things?

“Finally the Immaculate Virgin, preserved free from all stain of original sin, when the course of her earthly life was finished, was taken up body and soul into heavenly glory, and exalted by the Lord as Queen over all things.”

The 1994 “Catechism of the Catholic Church” #971

The queen of heaven

Jeremiah 7:18 The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead *their* dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.

Jeremiah 44:17 But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for *then* had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.

Be thou exalted, O God, above the heaven

Psalms 57:5 Be thou exalted, O God, above the heavens; *let thy glory be* above all the earth.

O LORD, and thou art exalted as head above all

1 Chronicles 29:11 Thine, O LORD, *is* the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all *that is* in the heaven and in the earth *is thine*; *thine is* the kingdom, O LORD, and thou art exalted as head above all.

Let the God of my salvation be exalted

Psalms 18:46 The LORD liveth; and blessed *be* my rock; and let the God of my salvation be exalted.

Be thou exalted, LORD

Psalms 21:13 Be thou exalted, LORD, in thine own strength: so will we sing and praise thy power.

Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted

Psalms 46:10 Be still, and know that I *am* God: I will be exalted among the heathen, I will be exalted in the earth.

God: he is greatly exalted

Psalms 47:9 The princes of the people are gathered together, *even* the people of the God of Abraham: for the shields of the earth *belong* unto God: he is greatly exalted.

The LORD is exalted

Isaiah 33:5 The LORD is exalted; for he dwelleth on high: he hath filled Zion with judgment and righteousness.

Worthy is the Lamb that was slain

Revelation 5:12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

That God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ

1 Peter 4:11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God; if any man minister, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

Him hath God exalted with his right hand

Acts 5:31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name

Philippians 2:9-11 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth; And *that* every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Mary: Christ's Mother, The Virgin

By David Michael Curtis

"The Virgin Mary" is a document written by David Michael Curtis. It discusses the Virgin Mary's role in relation to Jesus Christ and salvation.

The document argues that salvation comes through faith in Jesus Christ alone, specifically in His death, burial, and resurrection. It emphasizes that Jesus's atonement was finished and accepted by God at His ascension, making Him the sole high priest, mediator, and intercessor.

The document contrasts this view with the 19th-century elevation of Mary to a status equal to Jesus, stating that the Gospel focuses on Christ alone and that Mary is not an intercessor. It asserts that those who do God's will, which means believing in Jesus, are Jesus's true family.

The document concludes by emphasizing the importance of belief in Jesus and His finished work, stating that praying to Mary reflects a lack of belief and trust in Jesus.

Dear Friends,

In the 19th century, the Virgin Mary was elevated to a status equal to Jesus on every level. She was regarded as a co-mediatrix and a mediator to whom one could pray. It is said that she petitions for us so that we might find peace with God at the hour of our death. However, this understanding fails to grasp the Gospel of Jesus Christ on every level.

The Atoning Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

Jesus stood trial under Pontius Pilate and was crucified, buried, and resurrected. It is His death, burial, and resurrection that atones for our sins. John 3:16 tells us that God loved the world so much that He gave His only begotten Son so that whoever believes in Him will not perish but have everlasting life. Salvation comes through faith in Jesus Christ, specifically in His death, burial, and resurrection.

Jesus, Our High Priest, and the Finished Atonement.

At His ascension, Jesus went directly into the presence of God, where God accepted His sacrifice. The atonement was finished, entirely the work of Christ. After He had purged our sins by Himself, He sat down. In the Old Testament, Leviticus 16 describes a high priest who, once a year, entered the Holy of Holies, where the Ark of the Covenant was, and sprinkled blood on the mercy seat to make atonement for the sins of Israel. Atonement was performed by the high priest once a year, as described in Hebrews Chapter 9, and serves as a shadow—a type—of what Jesus did at His ascension.

The Gospel Focuses on Christ Alone.

Jesus is our high priest. He entered God's presence once at His ascension, bringing His blood to make atonement for our sins. This was an act He did alone, and His blood alone atoned for our sins. After presenting His blood and purging our sins, He sat down next to the throne of God. That is the essence of the Gospel, and it has absolutely nothing to do with Mary.

Jesus' True Family: Those Who Do God's Will.

There is a story in the Gospels where Mary and Jesus's brothers and sisters were outside looking for Him, and Jesus said, "My mother and my brothers are those who do the will of God." John tells us that Jesus said the will of God is to believe in Him. One of His brothers was named James, who at that time did not believe in Jesus. The disciples with Him who believed in Him were more authentic brothers of Christ than James, His flesh-and-blood brother standing outside looking for Him. Jesus emphasized that His true family are those who do the will of God, which means believing in His Son, Jesus Christ. Not all His family believed in Him, so the focus was on those who did.

Belief in Jesus and the Finished Work.

Do you believe in Jesus? Do you believe the Gospel you just heard—that Jesus died, was buried, resurrected, went to heaven, and became our high priest, presenting His blood at the throne of God, thereby making atonement for our sins? He accomplished this by Himself, and then He sat down. Jesus is our high priest, our mediator, and our intercessor. He performs this act of intercession in a seated position; He doesn't have to say anything or do anything because it is finished. He can sit silently, as the Father has told Him to wait until He makes His enemies His footstool.

Jesus' Seated Position: A Reminder of Reconciliation.

So, Jesus is just sitting there, waiting for the Father to do this. His work is complete. His presence next to the throne of God constantly reminds us of the Gospel—that He died for our sins, was buried and resurrected, and that God accepted His atonement on the cross. Through Jesus Christ, we have peace with God and have been reconciled to Him. Jesus's seated position next to the throne serves as a constant reminder to God, the angels, and us that He has reconciled us to God.

Mary's Role in Salvation.

That is the Gospel, and it has nothing to do with Mary. Mary is not your intercessor. She did not shed her blood. You do not need Mary to soften Jesus's heart, calm Him down, or ask Him to be kind to you. You do not need Mary to ask your Father in heaven to love you. God loved the world so much that He gave His only begotten Son so that whoever believes in Him will not perish but have everlasting life.

The Importance of Belief in Jesus.

That is the Gospel. Do you believe it? Do you believe that God the Father loves you? Do you believe that Jesus loves you? Do you believe that God accepted the atonement of Jesus Christ on the cross, offering us atonement and forgiveness of sins through faith in Jesus? Those who are Jesus's true family are those who believe in Him. If you are praying to Mary, it reflects a lack of belief in Jesus and a lack of trust in Him.

.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Mass

Weekly Communion, the Lord's Supper

Prefigured.

Exodus 12:21-28. ¶ Then Moses called for all the elders of Israel, and said unto them, Draw out and take you a lamb according to your families, and kill the passover. And ye shall take a bunch of hyssop, and dip *it* in the blood that *is* in the bason, and strike the lintel and the two side posts with the blood that *is* in the bason; and none of you shall go out at the door of his house until the morning. For the LORD will pass through to smite the Egyptians; and when he seeth the blood upon the lintel, and on the two side posts, the LORD will pass over the door, and will not suffer the destroyer to come in unto your houses to smite *you*. And ye shall observe this thing for an ordinance to thee and to thy sons for ever. And it shall come to pass, when ye be come to the land which the LORD will give you, according as he hath promised, that ye shall keep this service. And it shall come to pass, when your children shall say unto you, What mean ye by this service? That ye shall say, It *is* the sacrifice of the LORD'S passover, who passed over the houses of the children of Israel in Egypt, when he smote the Egyptians, and delivered our houses. And the people bowed the head and worshipped. And the children of Israel went away, and did as the LORD had commanded Moses and Aaron, so did they.

1 Corinthians 5:7-8. ¶ Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened *bread* of sincerity and truth.

Instituted.

Matthew 26:26. ¶ And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, **Take, eat; this is my body.**

1 Corinthians 11:23. ¶ For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread:

Object of.

Luke 22:19. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, **This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.**

1 Corinthians 11:24. And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, **Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.**

1 Corinthians 11:26. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Is the communion of the body and blood of Christ.

1 Corinthians 10:16. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

Both bread and wine are necessary to be received in.

Matthew 26:27. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, **Drink ye all of it;**

1 Corinthians 11:26. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Self-examination commanded before partaking of.

1 Corinthians 11:28. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of *that* bread, and drink of *that* cup.

1 Corinthians 11:31. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

Repentance necessary to the worthy partaking of.

1 Corinthians 5:7-8. ¶ Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened *bread* of sincerity and truth.

Partakers of, be wholly separate unto God.

1 Corinthians 10:21. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

Was continually partaken of, by the Primitive Church.

Acts 2:42. ¶ And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Acts 20:7. ¶ And upon the first *day* of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight.

Unworthy Partakers Of

Are guilty of the body and blood of Christ.

1 Corinthians 11:27. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink *this* cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

Discern not the Lord's body.

1 Corinthians 11:29. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

Are visited with judgments.

1 Corinthians 11:30. For this cause many *are* weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

Self-examination

Enjoined.

2 Corinthians 13:5 Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the Faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

Necessary before the communion.

1 Corinthians 11:28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

Cause of difficulty in.

Jeremiah 17:9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?

SHOULD BE ENGAGED IN

With holy awe.

Psalms 4:4 Stand in awe, and Sin not: commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still. Selah.

With diligent search.

Psalms 77:6 I call to remembrance my song in the night: I commune with mine own heart: and my spirit made diligent search.

Lamentations 3:40 Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD.

With prayer for divine searching.

Psalms 26:2 Examine me, O LORD, and prove me; try my reins and my heart.

Psalms 139:23-24 Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

With purpose of amendment.

Psalms 119:59 I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto thy testimonies.

Lamentations 3:40 Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD.

Advantages of.

1 Corinthians 11:31 For if we would Judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

Galatians 6:4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another.

1 John 3:20-22 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God. And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

Miracles

False prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many

Matthew 24:11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

Matthew 24:24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were possible*, they shall deceive the very elect.

The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not

Jeremiah 14:14 Then the LORD said unto me, The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.

Jeremiah 23:21 I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied.

Jeremiah 23:25 I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed.

If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive

John 5:43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

Acts 5:36-37 For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished; and all, *even* as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

Acts 8:9-10 But there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one: To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

Deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast

Revelation 13:14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by *the means of* those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

Revelation 16:14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, *which* go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

Revelation 19:20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

Mortal Sins

Different Degrees of Punishment

Luke 12:47-48 And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

THERE ARE SINS NOT UNTO DEATH

1 John 5:16-17 If any man see his brother sin **a sin which is not unto death**, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for **them that sin not unto death**. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. All unrighteousness is sin: and **there is a sin not unto death**.

God Forgives All Who Repent, and Believe the Gospel

Mark 1:15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: **repent ye, and believe the gospel**.

Luke 24:47 And that **repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name** among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

God Forgives All Who Humble Themselves and Confess Their Sins

1 John 1:9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Luke 18:13-14 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, **God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified** *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and **he that humbleth himself shall be exalted**.

THERE ARE SINS UNTO DEATH

1 John 5:16-17 If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. **THERE IS A SIN UNTO DEATH: I do not say that he shall pray for it**. All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.

The Wrath Of God Upon The Children Of Disobedience.

Ephesians 5:3-6. But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, **HATH ANY INHERITANCE IN THE KINGDOM OF CHRIST AND OF GOD.** Let no man deceive you with vain words: for **BECAUSE OF THESE THINGS COMETH THE WRATH OF GOD UPON THE CHILDREN OF DISOBEDIENCE.**

The Unrighteous Shall Not Inherit The Kingdom Of God.

1 Corinthians 6:9-10. Know ye not that **THE UNRIGHTEOUS SHALL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD? *Be not deceived:*** neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, **SHALL INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.**

Such Shall Not Inherit The Kingdom Of God.

Galatians 5:19-21. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that **THEY WHICH DO SUCH THINGS SHALL NOT INHERIT THE KINGDOM OF GOD.**

By Nature The Children Of Wrath.

Ephesians 2:2-3. Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in **THE CHILDREN OF DISOBEDIENCE:** Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature **THE CHILDREN OF WRATH,** even as others.

Shall Have Their Part In The Lake Of Fire.

Revelation 21:8. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, **SHALL HAVE THEIR PART IN THE LAKE WHICH BURNETH WITH FIRE AND BRIMSTONE:** which is the second death.

For Without Are.

Revelation 22:15. **FOR WITHOUT ARE** dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie

The Wrath Of God On The Children Of Disobedience.

Colossians 3:5-6. Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: **FOR WHICH THINGS' SAKE THE WRATH OF GOD COMETH ON THE CHILDREN OF DISOBEDIENCE:**

They Which Commit Such Things Are Worthy Of Death

Romans 1:28-32. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who **KNOWING THE JUDGMENT OF GOD, THAT THEY WHICH COMMIT SUCH THINGS ARE WORTHY OF DEATH**, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

The Law Is Not Made For The Lawless

1 Timothy 1:9-10. Knowing this, that **THE LAW IS NOT MADE FOR A RIGHTEOUS MAN, BUT FOR THE LAWLESS AND DISOBEDIENT**, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine;

No Meat on Fridays

Commanding to abstain from meats

1 Timothy 4:1-3 ¶ Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

Colossians 2:16 ¶ Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath *days*:

Romans 14:15 But if thy brother be grieved with *thy* meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

Romans 14:17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

Romans 14:20 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil for that man who eateth with offence.

1 Corinthians 8:8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse.

1 Corinthians 8:10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols;

1 Corinthians 8:13 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

Original Sin

The Fall of Man

By the disobedience of Adam.

Genesis 3:6 And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

Genesis 3:11-12 And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

Through temptation of the devil.

Genesis 3:1-5 ¶ Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

2 Corinthians 11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

1 Timothy 2:14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

MAN IN CONSEQUENCE OF;

Made in the image of Adam.

Genesis 5:3 And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and Begat a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth:

1 Corinthians 15:48-49 As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

Born in Sin.

Job 15:14 What is man, that he should be clean? and he which is born of a woman, that he should be Righteous?

Job 25:4 How then can man be justified with God? or how can he be clean that is born of a woman?

Psalms 51:5 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in Sin did my mother conceive me.

Isaiah 48:8 Yea, thou heardest not; yea, thou knewest not; yea, from that time that thine ear was not opened: for I knew that thou wouldest deal very treacherously, and wast called a transgressor from the womb.

John 3:6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

A child of wrath.

Ephesians 2:3 Among whom also we all had our Conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

Evil in heart.

Genesis 6:5 And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Genesis 8:21 And the LORD smelled a sweet savour; and the LORD said in his heart, I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake; for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth; neither will I again smite any more every thing living, as I have done.

Jeremiah 16:12 And ye have done worse than your Fathers; for, behold, ye walk every one after the imagination of his evil heart, that they may not hearken unto me:

Matthew 15:19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies:

Blinded in heart.

Ephesians 4:18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

Corrupt and perverse in his ways.

Genesis 6:12 And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.

Psalms 10:5 His ways are always grievous; thy judgments are far above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffeth at them.

Romans 3:12-16 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat *is* an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps *is* under their lips: Whose mouth *is* full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet *are* swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery *are* in their ways:

Depraved in mind.

Romans 8:5-7 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is Death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the Carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to The Law of God, neither indeed can be.

Ephesians 4:17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

Colossians 1:21 And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

Titus 1:15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and Conscience is defiled.

Without understanding.

Psalms 14:2-3 The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

Receives not the things of God.

1 Corinthians 2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Comes short of God's glory.

Romans 3:23 For all have Sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

Defiled in Conscience.

Titus 1:15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and Conscience is defiled.

Hebrews 10:22 Let us draw near with a true heart in full Assurance of Faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

Intractable.

Job 11:12 For vain man would be wise, though man be born like a wild ass's colt.

Estranged from God.

Genesis 3:8 And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.

Psalms 58:3 The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.

Ephesians 4:18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

Colossians 1:21 And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

In bondage to Sin.

Romans 6:19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

Romans 7:5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of Sins, which were by The Law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto Death.

Romans 7:23 But I see another law in my members, warring against The Law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to The Law of Sin which is in my members.

In bondage to the devil.

2 Timothy 2:26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

Hebrews 2:14-15 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through Death he might destroy him that had the power of Death, that is, the devil; And deliver them who through fear of Death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

Constant in evil.

Psalms 10:5 His ways are always grievous; thy judgments are far above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffeth at them.

2 Peter 2:14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from Sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with [Covetous] practices; cursed children:

Conscious of guilt.

Genesis 3:7-8 And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.

Genesis 3:10 And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.

Unrighteous.

Ecclesiastes 7:20 For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and Sinneth not.

Romans 3:10 As it is written, There is none Righteous, no, not one:

Abominable.

Job 15:16 How much more abominable and filthy is man, which drinketh iniquity like water?

Psalms 14:3 They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

Turned to his own way.

Isaiah 53:6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

Loves darkness.

John 3:19 And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than Light, because their deeds were evil.

Corrupt in speech.

Romans 3:13-14 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their Tongues they have used deceit; the poison of Asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:

Devoid of the fear of God.

Romans 3:18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

Depraved.

Genesis 6:5 And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Romans 7:18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

Dead in Sin.

Ephesians 2:1 And you hath he quickened, who were Dead in trespasses and Sins;

Colossians 2:13 And you, being Dead in your Sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

All men partake of the effects of.

1 Kings 8:46 If they Sin against thee, (for there is no man that Sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them to the enemy, so that they carry them away captives unto the land of the enemy, far or near;

Galatians 3:22 But the scripture hath concluded all under Sin, that the promise by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

1 John 1:8 If we say that we have no Sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

1 John 5:19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

PUNISHMENT CONSEQUENT UPON,

Banishment from Paradise.

Genesis 3:24 So he Drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

Condemnation to labor and sorrow.

Genesis 3:16 Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

Genesis 3:19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou Art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

Temporal Death.

Genesis 3:19 In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou Art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

Romans 5:12 Wherefore, as by one man Sin entered into the world, and Death by Sin; and so Death passed upon all men, for that all have Sinned:

1 Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

Eternal Death.

Job 21:30 That the wicked is reserved to the day of destruction? they shall be brought forth to the day of wrath.

Romans 5:18 Therefore as by the offence of one Judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

Romans 6:23 For the wages of Sin is Death; but the gift of God is Eternal Life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Cannot be remedied by man.

Proverbs 20:9 Who can say, I have made my heart clean, I am pure from my Sin?

Jeremiah 2:22 For though thou wash thee with nitre, and take thee much soap, yet thine iniquity is marked before me, saith the Lord GOD.

Jeremiah 13:23 Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? then may ye also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.

Remedy for, provided by God.

Genesis 3:15 And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Flesh And Blood Cannot Inherit The Kingdom Of God

1 Corinthians 15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

The Carnal Mind Is Not Subject To The Law Of God

Romans 8:7 Because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

They That Are In The Flesh Cannot Please God

Romans 8:8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

He Cannot Enter Into The Kingdom Of God.

John 3:3-5 Jesus answered and said unto him, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.* Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.*

That Which Is Born Of The Flesh Is Flesh

John 3:6-7 *That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.*

The Curse Of The Law

Galatians 3:10 For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

The Mt. Sinai Law Given Demands Perfect Obedience

Romans 10:5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

Galatians 3:12 And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them.

In My Flesh, Dwelleth No Good Thing

Romans 7:18-21 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but *how* to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

The Law Of Sin In My Members

Romans 7:22-23 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

There Is None That Doeth Good, No, Not One

Romans 3:12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; **there is none that doeth good, no, not one.**

Psalms 53:1 ¶ To the chief Musician upon Mahalath, Maschil, *A Psalm* of David. The fool hath said in his heart, *There is* no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: **there is none that doeth good.**

Ecclesiastes 7:20 For **there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.**

Isaiah 64:6 ¶ But we are all as an unclean **thing**, and all our righteousnesses **are** as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.

Summary Of Romans 1:18-3:20

Galatians 3:22 But **the scripture hath concluded all under sin**, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

All Have Sinned

Romans 3:23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

Romans 3:28 Therefore we conclude that **a man is justified by faith** without the deeds of the law.

Romans 3:20-28 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus. Where *is* boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

Not By Works Of Righteousness Which We Have Done

Romans 4:2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory; but not before God.

Romans 9:32 Wherefore? Because ***they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law.*** For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that **a man is not justified by the works of the law**, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and **not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.**

Titus 3:5 **Not by works of righteousness which we have done**, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

We Have Peace With God Through Our Lord Jesus Christ

Romans 5:1 ¶ Therefore being justified by faith, **we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:**

Christ Died For The Ungodly

Romans 5:6 ¶ For when we were yet without strength, in due time **Christ died for the ungodly.**

While We Were Yet Sinners, Christ Died For Us

Romans 5:8-10 But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, **while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.** Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, **when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son,** much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

We Have Now Received The Atonement.

Romans 5:11 And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom **we have now received the atonement.**

The Gift By Grace, Is By One Man, Jesus Christ

Romans 5:15 But not as the offence, so also *is* the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and **the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ,** hath abounded unto many.

By The Righteousness Of One The Free Gift Came

Romans 5:18 Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so **by the righteousness of one *the free gift came upon all men*** unto justification of life.

By The Obedience Of One Shall Many Be Made Righteous

Romans 5:19 For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so **by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**

God Justifies the Ungodly

Romans 4:5 But to him that worketh not, but **believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly,** his faith is counted for righteousness.

He Was Wounded For Our Transgressions

Isaiah 53:5-6 But **he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities:** the chastisement of our peace *was* upon him; and **with his stripes we are healed.** All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and **the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.**

Matthew 20:28 *Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

A Propitiation Through Faith In His Blood

Romans 3:25 Whom **God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood,** to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

Jesus Christ Was Delivered For Our Offenses

Romans 4:24-25 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; **25 Who was delivered for our offences**, and was raised again for our justification.

Christ Died For The Ungodly

Romans 5:6-8 ¶ For when we were yet without strength, in due time **Christ died for the ungodly**. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. **8** But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, **while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us**.

Romans 8:3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, **God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:**

It Is God That Justifieth

Romans 8:33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? ***It is God that justifieth.***

1 Corinthians 15:3-4 For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that **Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures**; And that **he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures**:

God Justifies The Heathen Through Faith

Galatians 3:8 And the scripture, foreseeing that **God would justify the heathen through faith**, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

Such Were Some Of You

1 Corinthians 6:9-11 ¶ Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And ***SUCH WERE SOME OF YOU***: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

He Hath Made Him To Be Sin For Us

2 Corinthians 5:21 For **he hath made him to be sin for us**, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Galatians 1:4 **Who gave himself for our sins**, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:

Christ Hath Redeemed Us From The Curse Of The Law

Galatians 3:13 **Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law**, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree:

Christ Also Hath Loved Us

Ephesians 5:2 And walk in love, as **Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God** for a sweetsmelling savour.

Christ Jesus Came Into The World To Save Sinners

1 Timothy 1:13-15 **Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious**: but I obtained mercy, because I did *it* ignorantly in unbelief. And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. This *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that **Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief**.

That He Might Redeem Us From All Iniquity

Titus 2:14 **Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity**, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

According To His Mercy He Saved Us

Titus 3:3-7 For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, *and* hating one another. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us**, by the washing of

regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

Christ Was Once Offered To Bear The Sins Of Many

Hebrews 9:28 So **Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many**; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.

We Were Redeemed With The Precious Blood Of Christ

1 Peter 1:18-19 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, *as* silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers; **But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:**

Jesus Christ Bare Our Sins In His Own Body On The Tree

1 Peter 2:24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.

Christ Suffered For Sins, That He Might Bring Us To God

1 Peter 3:18 ¶ For **Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God**, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

He Is The Propitiation For Our Sins

1 John 2:2 And **he is the propitiation for our sins**: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world.

God Loved Us And Sent His Son To Save Us From Our Sins

1 John 4:9-10 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that **God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.**

Jesus Loved Us, And Washed Us In His Own Blood

Revelation 1:5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Jesus Redeemed Us To God By His Blood

Revelation 5:9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for **thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Revelation 7:14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, **and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

Not By Works of Righteousness Which We Have Done

Titus 3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Not of works, lest any man should boast

Ephesians 2:8-9 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: **Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

Romans 4:2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory; but not before God.

Romans 9:11 (For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, **not of works**, but of him that calleth;)

Romans 9:16 So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

Romans 11:6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if *it be* of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

1 Corinthians 1:29-31 That no flesh should glory in his presence. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: That, according as it is written, **He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.**

2 Timothy 1:9 Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, **not according to our works**, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Titus 3:3-5 For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, *and* hating one another. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us**, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified

Romans 3:20 Therefore **by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight**: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.

Romans 3:27-28 Where *is* boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. Therefore we conclude that **a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.**

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that **a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ**, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

God justifies through faith

Galatians 3:8 And the scripture, foreseeing that **God would justify** the heathen **through faith**, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

Galatians 3:26 For ye are all the children of God **by faith in Christ Jesus**.

The hand of the LORD hath done this

Isaiah 41:20 That they may see, and know, and consider, and understand together, that **the hand of the LORD hath done this**, and the Holy One of Israel hath created it.

Psalms 111:2 The works of the LORD *are* great, sought out of all them that have pleasure therein.

Penance

There is no more offering for sin

Hebrews 10:17-18 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission of these *is*, *there is* no more offering for sin.

Thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive;

Psalms 86:5 For thou, Lord, *art* good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.

Man is not justified by the works of the law

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

If righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain

Galatians 2:21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness *come* by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

Justified by faith without the deeds of the law

Romans 3:28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

Penance vs. Repentance.

By David Michael Curtis

The file "Penance vs. Repentance" by David Michael Curtis discusses the difference between penance and repentance.

Here's a summary:

- **Penance** is described as an act of balancing "cosmic scales" by performing prescribed actions, like reciting prayers, to atone for sins, a concept associated with the Roman Catholic Church and also found in other belief systems like Freemasonry, Buddhism, and Hinduism (karma). Purgatory is mentioned in the context of Catholicism as a place to purge sins and balance the scales after death.
- **Repentance** is a change of mind and turning away from wickedness made possible by receiving the Holy Spirit at baptism. It's seen as a transformation from within, where the Holy Spirit produces "fruit" like love, peace, and goodness. The document argues that biblical repentance is not about performing actions to balance scales but about this internal change and transformation.
- The author argues that the translation of "repent" as "do penance" in some versions of the Bible, such as the Latin Vulgate, is a mistranslation.
- The author emphasizes that true repentance is connected to baptism and the receiving of the Holy Spirit, which enables one to turn away from sin and do good.

Dear Friends,

Around 400 AD, Jerome created the Latin Vulgate, which is the official text accepted by the Roman Catholic Church. In the Vulgate and any translations derived from it, you will find that John the Baptist said, "Do penance, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." In the King James Bible, wherever you encounter the word "repent," it actually refers to doing penance.

The Difference Between Penance and Repentance.

However, doing penance is not the same as repentance; there is a significant difference. Let me illustrate what doing penance entails. Imagine scales like those you would see in front of a courthouse, where a blindfolded lady holds them. On one side of the scale, you have your sins, which you confess to the priest — they weigh down that side heavily. After confessing, the priest says, "I absolve you of your sins," and then he prescribes something similar to a doctor giving a

prescription; this is called penance. Penance often involves reciting prayers, such as saying a certain number of Hail Mary's or Our Fathers. Each time you say a prayer, you are adding a little weight to the other side of the scale. Once you complete all the prescribed penances, the scales are balanced.

The Concept of Cosmic Scales in Various Beliefs.

This concept of cosmic scales is a belief held by many around the world, including Freemasons, who believe in balance, as well as Buddhists and those in India who believe in karma. They think that if your karma is out of balance, you will experience its consequences until you balance the cosmic scales with good karma. For these beliefs, when you achieve perfect balance, you reach a state called Nirvana. Buddhists believe in reincarnation and that one must return repeatedly until they perfectly balance their karma. Once you achieve this Zen-like state, you are no longer reincarnated — you cease to exist.

Purgatory and the Imbalanced Cosmic Scale in Catholicism.

In Roman Catholicism, if you die with a perfectly balanced cosmic scale, you may go straight to heaven. Still, very few Roman Catholics achieve this status except for a short list of canonized saints, like the Virgin Mary, who is regarded as being without sin. Most Roman Catholics die with an imbalanced cosmic balance because they may forget to confess certain sins to the priest. These unconfessed sins remain on the cosmic scale, leading to the necessity of purgatory. In purgatory, one must purge those sins, and once you achieve a perfect balance between good and evil, you can then go to heaven. So, instead of reincarnation, Roman Catholics have purgatory.

The True Meaning of Repentance.

However, Jerome mistranslated a crucial word in the Latin text when he wrote, "Repent for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." Repentance is an acknowledgment that we have all gone astray; we have followed our way, sinned, and disobeyed God. Repentance signifies a change of mind in which we turn from wickedness, trust God, and get baptized, ultimately receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit draws us to Christ, and it is the goodness of God that leads us to repentance.

Repentance and the Role of the Holy Spirit.

The repentance spoken of in the Bible cannot be achieved by human effort alone. Someone who has not been born of water and the Spirit cannot repent; it is impossible. We must be born of water and the Spirit. Once we receive the Holy Spirit at baptism, the Holy Spirit produces fruit within us. This fruit is primarily love but is also described as long-suffering, peace, goodness, gentleness, and meekness.

Baptism as the Foundation of True Repentance.

Therefore, repentance is not about performing penance; rather, it is the fruit we receive through the gift of the Holy Spirit, which is given at baptism. When we receive the Holy Spirit, He transforms us from the inside, helping us turn away from wickedness and toward doing good. We become the temple of God, and the Holy Spirit dwells within us, making us new creations. In order to bear fruit and repent, we must be baptized in water in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

Penance vs. Biblical Repentance.

You could say Hail Mary's or Our Father's prayers countless times, but the idea that you are balancing the scales to atone for your sins is unscriptural. It is not aligned with Christian teaching, nor is it the teaching of Christ. Repentance is a fundamentally different concept.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Praying For The Dead

Every one of us shall give an account of himself to God

Romans 14:12 So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already

John 3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life

John 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

Beware lest any man spoil you, after the tradition of men

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

God will bring thee into judgment

Ecclesiastes 11:9 Rejoice, O young man, in thy youth; and let thy heart cheer thee in the days of thy youth, and walk in the ways of thine heart, and in the sight of thine eyes: but know thou, that for all these *things* God will bring thee into judgment.

They shall give account thereof in the day of judgment

Matthew 12:36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment.

Give an account of thy stewardship

Luke 16:2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward.

Who shall give account to him

1 Peter 4:5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

That will by no means clear the guilty

Exodus 34:6-7 And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear *the guilty*; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth *generation*.

God shall bring every work into judgment

Ecclesiastes 12:13-14 ¶ Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this *is* the whole *duty* of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether *it be* good, or whether *it be* evil.

He that believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation

John 5:24-29 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them

Hebrews 7:25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Ten thousand prayers for the dead, will not change a man who died an unrepentant, unbeliever, into a baptized, repentant, believer

Purgatory

Do Saints "Purge" their own Sins for Millions of Years?

The blood of Christ has purged all the sins of the saints, "once for all," "it is finished"

Hebrews 7:27 Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for **this he did once**, when he offered up himself.

Hebrews 9:7 But **into the second went the high priest alone once every year**, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:

Hebrews 9:12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but **by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place**, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

Hebrews 9:25-26 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For **then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself**.

Hebrews 9:28 So **Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many**; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.

Hebrews 10:10 By the which will **we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all**.

1 Peter 3:18 ¶ For **Christ also hath once suffered for sins**, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

The blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin

1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

THE CROSS, CHRIST'S FINISHED WORK

How Does Christ's One Time Death on the Cross Obtain Eternal Redemption For Us?

Believers are **SANCTIFIED** by the Cross **ONCE—Forever**.

Hebrews 10:10. By the which will **we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.**

Believers Are **PERFECTED** by the Cross **ONCE—Forever**.

Hebrews 10:14. For **by one offering he hath perfected for ever them** that are sanctified.

Believers Are **WASHED** by the Cross.

Revelation 1:5. And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Believers Are **JUSTIFIED** by the Cross.

1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but **ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus,** and by the Spirit of our God.

Romans 5:9. Much more then, **being now justified by his blood,** we shall be saved from wrath through him.

Believers Are **FORGIVEN** of ALL Sin by the Cross.

Ephesians 1:7. In whom **we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins,** according to the riches of his grace;

John 1:7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

Believers Have The **ATONEMENT** Now by the Cross.

Romans 5:11. And not only so, but we also joy in God through **our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.**

Believers Have **PEACE** With God.

Romans 5:1. ¶ Therefore **being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:**

Believers Have Been RECONCILED With God by the Cross.

2 Corinthians 5:17-21. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of **God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ**, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that **God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them;** and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Let's Recap:

- **Jesus Offering Upon the Cross, was for the Sins of the WHOLE World.**
- **God's Wrath Has Been ETERNALLY Satisfied by the Cross.**
- **Believers are SANCTIFIED Forever by the Cross.**
- **Believers are PERFECTED Forever by the Cross.**
- **Believers are WASHED by the Cross.**
- **Believers are JUSTIFIED by the Cross.**
- **Believers have the ATONEMENT Now by the Cross.**
- **Believers have PEACE with God by the Cross.**
- **Believers have Been RECONCILED with God by the Cross.**

Jesus PURGED Our Sins, by Himself, & then He Sat Down.

Relics

Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money

Acts 8:18-22 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, **Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.** Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

Ye were not redeemed with corruptible things

1 Peter 1:18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

Rock the Church Is Built on, Is Jesus Christ

Matthew 16:18. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and **upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.**

The Rock Is Perfect and Without Iniquity.

Deuteronomy 32:3-4. Because **I will publish the name of the LORD:** ascribe ye greatness unto our God. **He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.**

Deuteronomy 32:31. For their rock *is* not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves *being* judges.

Jesus Christ Is An Immovable Rock—He Did No Sin.

1 Peter 2:22. Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth:

2 Corinthians 5:21. For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, **who knew no sin;** that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Peter Was A “Tiny Stone”—A Sinful Man.

John 1:42. And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, **Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.**

Luke 5:8. When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, **Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.**

Who is a Rock Save Our God?

1 Samuel 2:2. *There is* none holy as the LORD: **for *there is* none beside thee: neither *is there* any rock like our God.**

2 Samuel 22:32. For who *is* God, save the LORD? and who *is* a rock, save our God?

Psalms 18:31. For who *is* God save the LORD? or who *is* a rock save our God?

That Rock Was Christ.

1 Corinthians 10:4. And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and **that Rock was Christ.**

The foundation of the Church is Jesus Christ.

1 Corinthians 3:11. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

Jesus Christ Himself Being The Chief Corner Stone.

Matthew 21:42. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, **The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner:** this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

Mark 12:10. And have ye not read this scripture; **The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:**

Luke 20:17. And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, **The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?**

Acts 4:11. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

Ephesians 2:20. And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

1 Peter 2:7-9. Unto you therefore which believe *he is* precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

The Head Of All Principality And Power.

Colossians 2:10. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:

Thou Art Exalted As Head Above All.

1 Chronicles 29:11. Thine, O LORD, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all *that is* in the heaven and in the earth *is thine*; thine *is* the kingdom, O LORD, and **thou art exalted as head above all.**

Psalm 57:11. Be thou exalted, O God, above the heavens: *let thy glory be above all the earth.*

The King Of Heaven.

Daniel 4:37. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works *are* truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.

Glory Through Jesus Christ.

Romans 16:27. To God only wise, *be* glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

Abraham's Promised Seed is Christ.

Galatians 3:16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, **And to thy seed, which is Christ.**

All Things Were Created By Him, And For Him.

Colossians 1:16-18. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, **whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers:** all things were created by him, and for him: And **he is before all things**, and by him all things consist. And **he is the head of the body, the church:** who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; **that in all *things* he might have the preeminence.**

Jesus Christ Is Far Above All Principality, And Power.

Ephesians 1:20-23. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*, **Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,** Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Jesus Christ Is The Head of the Church.

Ephesians 4:15-16. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is **the head, *even* Christ:** From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Ephesians 5:23. For the husband is the head of the wife, **even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.**

Colossians 1:18-19. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence. For it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulness dwell;

God Hath Given Him A Name Which Is Above Every Name.

Philippians 2:9-11. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth; And *that* every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Angels, Authorities And Powers Made Subject Unto Him.

1 Peter 3:22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

1 Peter 5:11. To him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

2 Peter 3:18. But grow in grace, and *in* the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him *be* glory both now and for ever. Amen.

Jude 25. To the only wise God our Saviour, *be* glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty.

Revelation 4:8-11. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about *him*; and *they were* full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, **Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.** And when those beasts **give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,** The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, **Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.**

Worthy Is The Lamb That Was Slain To Receive Power.

Revelation 5:9-14. And they sung a new song, saying, **Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about

Only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords.

Psalm 47:2. For the LORD most high *is* terrible; *he is* a great King over all the earth.

Revelation 5:11-14. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was **ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands**; Saying with a loud voice, **Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.** And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, **Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.** And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and* twenty elders **fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.**

Revelation 7:12. Saying, **Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.**

Revelation 19:1. And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, **Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:**

Revelation 19:6. And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, **Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.**

Earth.

Psalm 83:18. That *men* may know that thou, **whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art** the most high over all the earth.

Jeremiah 10:10. But **the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king:** at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.

The King Eternal, Immortal, Invisible, The Only Wise God

1 Timothy 1:17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, **be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.**

1 Timothy 6:13-16. I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *before* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of **our Lord Jesus Christ:** Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and **only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.**

KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Revelation 17:14. These shall make war with the Lamb, and **the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings:** and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

Revelation 19:16. And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.**

Jesus Kingdom Is Not Yet On Earth.

John 18:36. Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world:** if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

Matthew 6:10. **Thy kingdom come.** Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven.

Matthew 6:13. *And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil:* **For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.**

A Kingdom, Which Shall Never Be Destroyed.

Daniel 2:44-45. And IN THE DAYS OF THESE KINGS SHALL THE **GOD OF HEAVEN SET UP A KINGDOM, WHICH SHALL NEVER BE DESTROYED:** and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream *is* certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Daniel 4:34. And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and **I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, WHOSE DOMINION IS AN EVERLASTING DOMINION, AND HIS KINGDOM IS FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION:**

The Everlasting Kingdom is Given To Jesus Christ.

Daniel 7:13-14. I saw in the night visions, and, **behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days,** and they brought him near before him. **AND THERE WAS GIVEN HIM DOMINION, AND GLORY, AND A KINGDOM,** that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: **HIS DOMINION IS AN EVERLASTING DOMINION, WHICH SHALL NOT PASS AWAY, AND HIS KINGDOM THAT WHICH SHALL NOT BE DESTROYED.**

Matthew 26:63-64. But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, **Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.**

Ascribe Righteousness to My Maker.

Deuteronomy 32:3. Because I will publish the name of the LORD: **ascribe ye greatness unto our God.**

Job 36:3. I will fetch my knowledge from afar, and will **ascribe righteousness to my Maker.**

Psalms 68:34. **Ascribe ye strength unto God:** his excellency *is* over Israel, and his strength *is* in the clouds.

Their Rock Is Not As Our Rock.

Deuteronomy 32:31. For their rock *is* not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves *being* judges.

A Wise Man, Which Built His House Upon A Rock.

Matthew 7:21-29. Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. **Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:** And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for **it was founded upon a rock.** And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, *shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:* And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and *it fell: and great was the fall of it.* And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: For he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

Water from the Rock In Horeb (Exodus 17:5-7)

Exodus 17:5-7. And the LORD said unto Moses, Go on before the people, and take with thee of the elders of Israel; and thy rod, wherewith thou smotest the river, take in thine hand, and go. Behold, I will stand before thee there upon the rock in Horeb; **and thou shalt smite the rock, and there shall come water out of it, that the people may drink.** And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel. And he called the name of the place Massah, and Meribah, because of the chiding of the children of Israel, and because they tempted the LORD, saying, Is the LORD among us, or not?

Water Flowing from the Rock (Numbers 20:7-11)

Numbers 20:7-11. And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and **speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water**, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink. And Moses took the rod from before the LORD, as he commanded him. And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice: and the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts *also*.

That Rock Was Christ

1 Corinthians 10:4. And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and **that Rock was Christ**.

Whosoever Drinketh of the Water That I Shall Give Him Shall Never Thirst

John 4:14. **But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.**

Rock: Peter or Christ?

By David Michael Curtis

The document "The Rock: Peter or Christ?" by David Michael Curtis, discusses the interpretation of the "rock" in Matthew 16. It presents three main interpretations:

1. **Peter's confession of faith:** The rock refers to the affirmation that Jesus is the Son of God.
2. **Christ Himself is the rock.**
3. **Peter is the rock.**

The document argues against the Roman Catholic view that Peter is the rock, and that church tradition is equally authoritative as the Bible. It highlights the contradictions among Church Fathers regarding the interpretation of the rock.

The author emphasizes the importance of eyewitness testimony from the New Testament and considers the writings of Church Fathers as hearsay. The author's position is that the rock symbolizes Jesus Christ, the chief cornerstone upon which the church was built, referencing biblical descriptions of God as a rock. The document also differentiates between the Greek words used for "rock" (referring to Christ) and "stone" (referring to Peter).

Dear Friends,

When examining the conversation between Jesus and Peter in Matthew 16, three main interpretations have emerged throughout history.

The first is that the "rock" refers to Peter's confession of faith. It is believed that when people affirm Peter's confession—that Jesus is the Son of God—they are added to the church through water baptism. Thus, the church is built upon the act of confessing Christ.

The second interpretation is that Christ Himself is the rock.

The third interpretation posits that Peter is the rock. Martin Luther, during the Council of Worms, pointed out that the church fathers, church councils, and popes often contradicted one another. Because of these contradictions, he argued that no rational person could, in good conscience, follow these sources. If different doctrines and statements are being taught, it becomes impossible to adhere to all of them; one must choose one over the other.

"Unless I am convinced by the testimony of the Scriptures or by clear reason (for I do not trust either in the pope or in councils alone, since it is well known that they have often erred and contradicted themselves), I am bound by the Scriptures I have quoted and my conscience is captive to the Word of God. I cannot and will not recant anything, since it is neither safe nor right to go against conscience. Here I stand; I can do no other. God help me. Amen." Martin Luther, Diet of Worms, 1521.

Roman Catholicism grounds its beliefs in both Scripture and tradition. Tradition encompasses the writings of the Church Fathers, the resolutions of church councils, and the teachings of the popes. These three elements constitute what is recognized as church tradition, which Roman Catholics regard as having equal authority to the Bible.

Now, let's hypothetically adopt the same framework that Roman Catholics do. We have three different interpretations of the rock: Is it Peter's confession, Peter himself, or Jesus Christ? We can consult the writings of the Church Fathers from before the Council of Nicaea, which took place in 325 AD.

Roman Catholicism would have everyone believe that 100% of the Church Fathers agreed that the rock represents Peter or the Bishop of Rome. However, when we examine the writings of the Church Fathers regarding Matthew 16 and the rock, we find they were divided. Some Church Fathers believed that the rock represented Christ, while others argued that Peter confessed that Jesus is Christ. Some also interpreted it as representing Peter himself or the Bishop of Rome. Unfortunately for Rome, the church fathers could not resolve this issue among themselves and were divided over the meaning of the Rock.

Luther highlighted this inconsistency, which shows that the writings of the Church Fathers contradict one another. We cannot settle the matter based on their writings since they are not in harmony and teach different beliefs.

In a court of law, only eyewitness testimony is considered admissible. Hearsay testimony—where someone recounts what they heard from an eyewitness—is generally not accepted. The Church Fathers are said to have known the apostles, such as John, Paul, or Peter, and it is often assumed that their testimony about what the apostles taught is reliable. However, their testimony is ultimately hearsay.

The only testimony that matters in God's courtroom is the eyewitness testimony recorded in the New Testament. After the apostles died, new elders and bishops emerged in various house churches. These leaders gained positions of authority that did not exist while the apostles were writing the New Testament. The Bible cannot substantiate the legitimacy of these positions, as they arose after the apostles' deaths. Consequently, all testimonies and teachings of the Church Fathers postdating the apostles are hearsay and not admissible in God's courtroom.

What you see taking place in the Bible is eyewitness testimony from those who witnessed Jesus's life, His trial, death, burial, resurrection, and appearances afterward. The apostles, men called directly by Jesus Christ, wrote the New Testament to share their testimonies. John emphasized that he is testifying so that you might believe, stating that he beheld Jesus with his own eyes and touched Him with his own hands. Peter also asserted that he was not fabricating a story when he

claimed to have seen Jesus transfigured on the mountain, shining as bright as the sun. They are testifying about what they experienced firsthand.

In contrast, figures like Clement of Rome and other Church Fathers are considered irrelevant to this discussion. Their testimony is hearsay, and no just court in the world would permit it. Such testimony would likely be stricken from the record, and the judge would instruct jurors to disregard it. Suppose we follow the rules set by the Roman Catholic Church. In that case, we must also disregard their testimony, as they frequently contradict one another regarding whether Peter is the rock or whether he confesses that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, or if Jesus Himself is the rock. Their division undermines their credibility.

The only testimony I prioritize comes from Moses, the prophets, and the apostles—those who wrote the Bible. I have prepared a document titled "The Rock," where I investigate everything the Bible says about this rock. My position is that the rock symbolizes Jesus Christ, who is the chief cornerstone upon which the church was built. There are explicit references linking the rock and Christ, starting with the books of Moses, which describe God as our rock and refuge. This rock is characterized as sinless, a description that does not fit Peter, who admitted to being a sinner and asked Jesus to depart from him.

I encourage you to explore this topic further. I have compiled materials in the topical Bible studies folder under the letter R, titled "The Rock." You can also find studies related to Jesus Christ in the eBook folder. These resources cover His roles as our creator, high priest, and the rock, among other topics directly related to Christ. The title of "The Rock" belongs to Jesus Christ.

The well-known Christian hymn sings, "Rock of Ages, cleft for me; let me hide myself in Thee." It's important to remember that the apostle Peter was originally named Simon. Jesus gave him the nickname Cephas, which means a piece of the rock or a stone. This term is different from the Greek word used for the rock in Matthew 16. When considering the rock, think of something as substantial as the Rock of Gibraltar; when thinking of Peter, imagine a small stone that you can hold in your hand. The rock Jesus is talking about is too large to be held in your hand.

Peter, while speaking of the chief cornerstone, Jesus Christ, tells us that we, the members of the church, are individual stones built upon that cornerstone. However, the foundation remains the cornerstone itself, which is Jesus Christ.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Rosary Beads

Use not vain repetitions

Matthew 6:7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

Christ Prayed Thrice

Matthew 26:39 And he went a little further, and **fell on his face, and prayed**, saying, **O my Father**, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou *wilt*.

Matthew 26:42 He went away again **the second time, and prayed**, saying, **O my Father**, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

Matthew 26:44 And he left them, and went away again, and **prayed the third time, saying the same words**.

The Parable of the Persistent Widow

Luke 18:1-8 ¶ And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; Saying, *There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?*

The Keys of Peter

Matthew 16:19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Matthew 18:18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

John 20:23 Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

Key #1: God freely Offers Forgiveness of sins

Matthew 26:28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

Romans 3:25 Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

Ephesians 1:7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

1 John 1:7-9 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. ¶ If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Key #2: Faith in Christ

John 3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

John 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

Key #3: Repentance

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Key #4: Baptism

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

Acts 13:38-39 Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

Key #5: Remission of sins

John 20:23 *Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.*

Mark 1:4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.

Luke 3:3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins;

Luke 24:47 *And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.*

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.

Having forgiven you all trespasses

Colossians 2:13 ¶ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

Hebrews 10:17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

Hebrews 10:18 Now where remission of these *is, there is* no more offering for sin.

The foundation of the apostles and prophets

Ephesians 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*;

Acts 2:42 ¶ And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Christ now possesses the keys of the kingdom of heaven

Matthew 16:19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Isaiah 22:22 And the key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder; so he shall open, and none shall shut; and he shall shut, and none shall open.

Revelation 1:18 *I am* he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

Revelation 3:7 ¶ And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;

Ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men

Matthew 23:13 ¶ But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

The Papacy

Persecution by the Papacy for 1260 Years—Prophesied

Prophecy is to be understood by God's people, and seen and not understood by unbelievers. This chapter is written in such a way to honor that purpose, by giving the believers the tools they need to study prophecy and understand, but not a commentary by which to understand them. There are already many commentaries from the 17th-18th centuries that do a fine job explaining how the Papacy fits into these prophecies. Additional resources are available at the end of this chapter.

COMPARISON OF LITTLE HORN of DANIEL 7 & BEAST of Revelation 13	
THE BEAST	LITTLE HORN
The Beast (Revelation 13:4)	The Beast (Daniel 7:11)
Out Of Sea (Revelation 13:1)	From The Sea (Daniel 7:3)
10 Horns & 7 Heads (Revelation 13:1) (Revelation 17:9 , Revelation 17:10)	10 Horns (Daniel 7:8)
10 Diadems = 10 Kings (Revelation 13:1 ; Revelation 17:12)	10 Kings (Daniel 7:24)
Like A Leopard...A Bear...A Lion (Revelation 13:2)	Like A Lion...A Bear...A Leopard (Daniel 7:4, 5, 6)
It Was Given Unto Him To Make War With The Saints (Revelation 13:7)	He Shall Wear Out The Saints Of The Most High (Daniel 7:25)

Mouth Speaking Arrogant Words (Revelation 13:5)	Mouth Uttering Boastful Words (Daniel 7:8 , Daniel 7:11 , Daniel 7:20)
Authority To Act 42 Months (Revelation 13:5 , Revelation 12:6 , Revelation 12:14)	Time, Times, And Half A Time (Daniel 7:25)
Blasphemies...Against God To BlaspHEME His Name (Revelation 13:5 , Revelation 13:6)	Will Speak Out Against The Most High (Daniel 7:25)
Make War With The Saints And To Overcome Them (Revelation 13:7)	Waging War With The Saints And Overpowering Them... Wear Down The Saints... Given Into His Hand (Daniel 7:21 , Daniel 7:25)
Number Of The Beast = Number Of A Man = 666 (Revelation 13:18)	Eyes Like Eyes Of A Man And A Mouth (Daniel 7:8) Had Eyes And A Mouth (Daniel 7:20)

Authority To Act 42 Months

The Little Horn Wears Out The Saints Of The Most High

Daniel 7:25 And he shall speak great words against the most High, and **shall wear out the saints of the most High**, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until **a time and times and the dividing of time**.

The Beast Given Power Forty and two Months

Revelation 13:5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue **forty and two months**.

The Woman Flees into The Wilderness For 1260 Days—1260 Years, the Dark Ages

Revelation 12:6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there **a thousand two hundred and threescore days**.

Revelation 12:14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for **a time, and times, and half a time**, from the face of the serpent.

Compared to Elijah being Fed Miraculously For 1260 Days

Luke 4:25-26 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up **three years and six months**, when great famine was throughout all the land;
²⁶ But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, *a city of Sidon*, unto a woman *that was* a widow.

1 Kings 17:1-7.

Elijah, having prophesied against Ahab, is sent to Cherith where the ravens feed him.

1 Kings 17:8-16.

Elijah, is sent to the widow of Zarephath.

Also Called the Two Witnesses Prophecy

Revelation 11:2-3 But the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot **forty and two months**. **3 ¶** And I will give *power* unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy **a thousand two hundred and threescore days**, clothed in sackcloth.

Revelation 11:15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become *the kingdoms* of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

The Identity of the the Papal Roman Antichrist
The 7 Heads Are 7 Mountains & Represent 7 Kings

Revelation 17:9-10 And here is the mind which hath wisdom. **The seven heads are seven mountains**, on which the woman sitteth. ¹⁰ And there are **seven kings**: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

Five Are Fallen (the five previous world empires):

1. Egypt
2. Assyria
3. Babylon
4. Persia
5. Greece

One Is (the world empire in the time of the Apostle John)

6. **Pagan Rome** (Receives Deadly Wound, the Fall of the Roman Empire, 476 AD)

The Other, Not Yet Come

7. **Papal Rome** (Deadly Wound Healed 600-610 AD), Lasting until the Papal States were lost in 1870 AD, a period of 1260 years.

The 8th

8. **Papal Rome** (Just prior to Israel being restored as a nation in 1948 AD,, (since 1929 AD, when Mussolini rectified the loss of the Papal States by giving the Vatican the 1 sq mile it rests on, making the Vatican an independent nation)

10 Horns & 7 Heads (the Nations of Europe)

Daniel 7:7-8 After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and **it had ten horns**.⁸ I considered the horns, and, behold, THERE CAME UP AMONG THEM ANOTHER LITTLE HORN, **before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots**: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.

Revelation 13:1 ¶ And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having **seven heads** and **ten horns**, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

Revelation 17:3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having **seven heads and ten horns**.

- **Daniel 7:8: 10 Horns** & Later There Are Only **7 Horns**, After 3 Horns Are Plucked Up By The Roots
- **Revelation 13:1: 7 Heads & 10 Horns** & Wearing 10 Crowns
- **Revelation 17:3: 7 Heads & 10 Horns** & Wearing No Crowns

Like A Leopard...A Bear...A Lion (Greece, Medo-Persia, & Babylon)

Revelation 13:2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as *the feet* of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

Daniel 7:4 The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.

Daniel 7:5 And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and *it had* three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.

Daniel 7:6 After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

Daniel 2



Babylon
605-539 BC

Medo-
Persia
539-331 BC

Grecia
331-168 BC

Rome
168 BC-476 AD

Daniel 7



The Pagan Roman Empire Gave its Seat and Power to Papal Rome

Revelation 13:1-2 ¶ And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, *having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.* And the beast which I saw *was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion:* and **the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.**

A woman sits upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns
(the Nations of Europe).

Revelation 17:3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and **I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast**, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth

Revelation 17:9 And here *is* the mind which hath wisdom. **The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.**

That great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth

Revelation 17:18 And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

That great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth, that sits on seven mountains, is the city of Rome

Revelation 17:6 And I saw **the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus:** and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

Daniel 7:21 I beheld, and the same horn **made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;**

Revelation 13:7 And **it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them:** and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

The Pope

Peter Prohibited Worship of Himself, a Man

Acts 10:25-26 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man.

Don't Worship Fellow Servants & Brethren—Worship God

Matthew 23:8-10 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ.

Revelation 19:10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: **worship God**: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Revelation 22:8-9 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: **worship God**.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Paul Prohibited Worship of Himself, "Worship God"

Acts 20:28-31 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that **after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.** Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

Romans 1:25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and **worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator**, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

Acts 14:8-18 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked: The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked. And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker. Then the priest

of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people. **Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:** Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness. And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

Acts 17:24-26 God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation;

Peter Is Not Exalted above Paul or Apollos

(Apollos was not an Apostle... Apollos was a "Labourer" and "Minister")

1 Corinthians 1:11-13 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that **every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided?** was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

1 Corinthians 3:5 ¶ Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

1 Corinthians 3:9 For we are labourers together with God: **ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.**

1 Corinthians 3:22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; **all are yours;**

Not for that, We Have Dominion Over Your Faith

2 Corinthians 1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

We Preach Not Ourselves

2 Corinthians 4:5 For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

Peter "an Elder," not a "Lord over God's heritage"

1 Peter 5:1-6 ¶ The elders which are among you I exhort, **who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ**, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, **not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind; **Neither as being lords over God's heritage**, but being ensamples to the flock. And when the chief **Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away. ¶ Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.** Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

Those "Who Loveth to have the Preeminence Among" them

The Apostles John & Paul REBUKED

3 John 9-10 ¶ I wrote unto the church: but **Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them**, receiveth us not. Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth *them* out of the church.

2 Corinthians 11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

We also are Men of Like Passions with You

Acts 14:15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? **We also are men of like passions with you**, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

James 5:17 **Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are**, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

James, Cephas, and John, Seemed to be Pillars, "it Maketh No Matter to Me"

Galatians 2:6 But of these **who seemed to be somewhat**, (whatsoever they were, **it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:**) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me:

Galatians 2:9 And when **James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars**, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

The Sacraments Save

By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified

Romans 3:20 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin.

All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags

Isaiah 64:6 ¶ But we are all as an unclean *thing*, and all our righteousnesses *are* as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.

That ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ

John 20:31 But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

Preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness

1 Corinthians 1:18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.

Ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth

John 8:40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

He that is of God heareth God's words

John 8:47 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

We ought to obey God rather than men

Acts 5:29 Then Peter and the *other* apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

The Sin of Presumption

That ye may know that ye have eternal life

1 John 5:13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

Whosoever believeth in him should have everlasting life

John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life

John 3:36 He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

He that believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life

John 5:24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

My sheep hear my voice, and I know them

John 10:27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

I give unto them eternal life

John 10:28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

He that believeth on me hath everlasting life

John 6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

Every one which believeth on him, may have everlasting life

John 6:40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

A desire to depart, and to be with Christ

Philippians 1:23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began

Titus 1:2 In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

This is the promise that he hath promised us, eternal life

1 John 2:25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.

Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God

John 3:3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God

John 1:12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

If children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ

Romans 8:17 ¶ And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together.

An inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you

1 Peter 1:4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

In my Father's house are many mansions

John 14:2 In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

John 14:3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also.

The LORD forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever

Psalm 37:28 For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off.

Tradition, Church Fathers & Church Councils

Scripture Alone

Rule #1. Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas.

Rule #2. Find ALL the Verses in the Bible On A Topic.

Rule #3. Believe Whatever The Bible Teaches About The Topic

Recognize the Pattern of the enemy

The enemy wants you to believe that only highly learned doctors, theologians, scholars and church authorities, educated in both Hebrew and Greek, can interpret scripture. If you would understand scripture, lay aside what these men command & teach.

The Roman Catholic Church, Joseph Smith (prophet of the Mormon Church), Ellen G White (prophet of the Seventh-day Adventist church), the Watch Tower Society (prophets of the Jehovah's Witnesses church), and expositor teachers (of the Protestant & Reformed churches) claim authority as DIVINE INTERPRETERS of Holy Scripture, and would have you to believe, that it is impossible to understand the Bible without their explanations and guidance.

“Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.” **2 Peter 1:20**

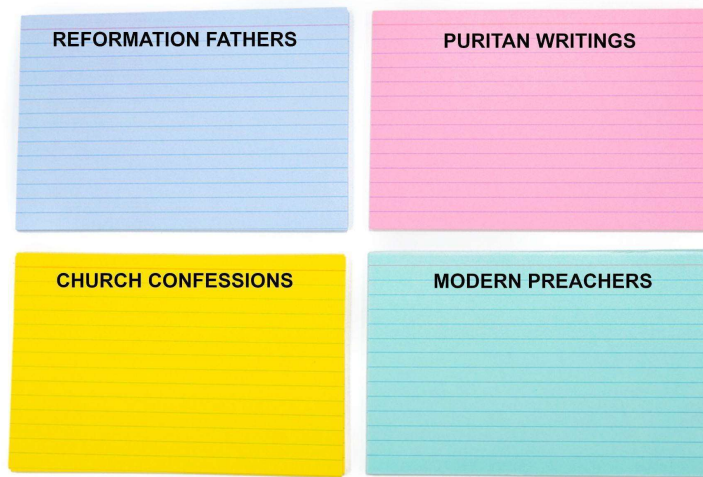
Rule #1. Do Not Start With any of the Preconceived Ideas of any Church Denomination, or of any Church Authorities.

Lay Aside What Church Authorities Teach

The Roman Catholic Church Authorities



The Protestant Church Authorities



All Churches Authorities Divide the Church

STEP # 1: LAY ASIDE ALL THE COLORED INDEX CARDS

The opinions of the church fathers, church councils, popes, reformation fathers, puritan writings, and most importantly my own opinions are irrelevant.



**STEP #2: FIND EVERY VERSE IN THE HOLY
KJV BIBLE ON THE TOPIC**



TYPICALLY 30-40 VERSES

All KJV Bible verses are encouraged and welcomed

Everyone in the world, from every church denomination in the world can **suggest verses** from the KJV Bible that ought to be included under every topic that the church wishes to study. **All KJV Bible verses are encouraged and welcomed!** However, ***please leave your church's commentaries at the door.*** All we need to understand the Bible is 100% of all the verses on the topic.



"There is no other commentary on the Bible so helpful as the Bible itself." — R. A. Torrey in his introduction to ***The Treasury of Scripture Knowledge***, or ***TSK***. Using cross references allows the Bible to speak for itself, to be its own interpreter.

[“The Holy KJV Bible” on Google drive](#), strives to offer “Scripture Alone.” We want to provide you with 100% of the KJV Bible verses on each topic, without any commentaries from church authorities.

We trust the Holy Spirit to guide you into the truth, using “**Scripture Alone**,” without anyone’s church authorities telling you or I what to believe about them.

Step #3: Believe What Ever The Bible Teaches.



Even the uneducated can easily understand the truth about any topic in the Bible, because it is harmoniously demonstrated in the MAJORITY (usually at least 95%) of the verses on that topic. There may be 1-2 verses that APPEAR to teach something else, and those are the verses you need to study more carefully, 1. in context 2. Comparing other verses 3. In the Greek & Hebrew etc. After Careful study, there is always a 100% harmony in the Holy Bible.

EXPOSITORY PREACHING

- ✗ Doctrines Can Be Based On One Verse
- ✗ Doctrines Can Vary In Interpretation
- ✗ The Church Is Dependant On The Expositor
- ✗ The Church Cannot Understand Without The Expositor
- ✗ Only The Highly Educated Can Understand or Interpret
- ✗ Requires An Understanding of Greek & Hebrew
- ✗ Many Expositors Agreeing, Doesn't Make It Truth

Expository Preaching is NOT Sola Scriptura

Expository VS Topical

TOPICAL BIBLE STUDY

- ✓ Doctrines Are Based On EVERY Verse On The Topic
 - ✓ Doctrines Do NOT Vary In Interpretation
- ✓ The Church Is NOT Dependant On An Interpreter
- ✓ The Church CAN Understand Without An Interpreter
 - ✓ The Uneducated Can Understand & Interpret
- ✓ Does NOT Require Understanding Greek & Hebrew
 - ✓ THE HOLY BIBLE EXPLAINS ITSELF

Topical Bible Study Is Sola Scriptura

Study Doctrine Topically

Rule #1. Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas.

Rule #2. Find ALL the Verses in the Bible On A Topic.

Rule #3. Believe Whatever The Bible Teaches About The Topic

Why Find ALL the Verses in the Bible On A Topic

One popular doctrine, on the surface appears to be supported by only a handful of verses: heresies use only a few verses & contradict other verses that speak plainly on the same topic.

2Co 5:6-8; Php 1:23; Lu 16:22-24; Lu 23:43

Next, notice how many verses there are on that same topic in the Bible. The popular view contradicts most of these verses.

Ac 2:29,34; Ac 5:29,29; 1Th 4:13-18; 1Co 15:51-52; Mt 13:43; 1Co 15:53-54; Mt 22:30; 2Co 5:1-4; 1Jo 3:2; Jas 2:26; 2Co 5; 1Co 15; 1Co 15:50-55; Mr 12:25; 2Co 5:6; 1Co 15:50; 2Co 5:8; 2Co 1; 2Co 2; 2Co 3; 2Co 4; 2Co 5; 2Co 6; 2Co 7; 1Co 15:51-55; Php 1:21-24; 2Ti 4:6-8; 1Th 4:13-18; Mt 9:24-25; Mr 5:39-42; Lu 8:49-56; Joh 11:4,11-14,23,26-27,34,39,43-44; 1Co 15:51-52; Ge 25:8; 1Ki 2:10; Ac 2:29,34; 1Ki 11:21,43; 1Ki 14:20,31; 1Ki 15:8,24; 1Ki 16:6,28; 1Ki 22:40,50; 2Ki 8:24; 2Ki 10:35; 2Ki 13:9,13; 2Ki 14:16,21-22,29; 2Ki 15:7,22,38; 2Ki 16:20; 2Ki 20:21; 2Ki 21:18; 2Ki 24:6; 1Th 4:13-18; Ge 2:7; Ec 12:7; Jas 2:26; Job 27:3; Ge 2:7; Eze 18:20; Re 16:3; Job 4:17; 1Ti 6:15-16; Joh 5:28-29; Ac 2:29,34; Job 17:13; Ec 9:5-6,10; Ps 115:17; Job 14:12,21; Ec 9:6; Ps 146:4; Joh 11:11-14; Job 14:12; 2Pe 3:10; Re 22:12; 1Th 4:16-17; 1Co 15:51-53; Ge 3:4; Re 12:9; Ex 7:11; 1Sa 28:3-25; Da 2:2; Ac 16:16-18; Re 16:14; Mt 24:24; Re 13:13-14; 2Co 11:14; Mt 24:23-24; Ac 17:11; Isa 8:20; Le 20:27; Lu 20:35-36; Re 21:4; 1Co 15:54; Heb 9:27; Ec 9:5-6; Ps 104:29; Ec 9:5; Ps 146:4; Ec 9:6; 2Ki 20:1; Job 17:13; Job 14:1-2; Job 11; Job 12; Re 16:14; Mt 24:24

Only Truth Can Stand Up To 100% of the Verses on a Topic Harmoniously

...and Demonstrate its Unity with every other Doctrine in the Bible

John 8:32 *And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.*

Anyone can make up a doctrine, from 1-2 verses, and dress it up and make it sound good. Which is what expository preachers do. However no one can topically use 30-40 verses, and twist them around to say something that is not there.

Those Teaching Error Only Have Five Options:

...When Confronted with Evidence from All the Verses Topically,

1. **Silence:** ignore the evidence, and forget they have ever seen it.
2. **Denial:** make excuses, explain away why the majority of the scriptural evidence presented "doesn't mean what you think it means."
3. **Fear:** "We are the only true church." "Our church leaders (or prophets) are the only ones with authority to interpret scriptures,"—or, "Our expository teachers (or prophets) are the only ones with the correct interpretation of scripture." "Anyone who challenges our

authority or our teachings, is going to hell." "Anyone that refuses to join us is going to hell."
"Everyone that leaves our church is going to hell,"etc. **Avoid these types of churches:**

4. **Persecute:** kill the messengers and burn their books, hoping it will all go away.
5. **Repent,**and believe the truth

It is impossible for heresy to stand, when compared to 100% of the verses on a topic.

Be A Believer

Rule #1. Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas.

Rule #2. Find ALL the Verses in the Bible On A Topic.

Rule #3. Believe Whatever The Bible Teaches About The Topic

K.I.S.S. – Keep It Simple Saint!

Why Rule #3. Believe Whatever The Bible Teaches About The Topic?

Confusion Is Always From The Enemy.

1 Corinthians 14:33 For **God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace**, as in all churches of the saints.

James 3:17 But **the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable**, gentle, *and* easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

Hebrews 12:11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless **afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.**

Isaiah 32:17 And **the work of righteousness shall be peace**; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever.

Babylon = Confusion

Revelation 17:5 And upon her forehead was a name written, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.**

Are You Still Confused?

Likely you skipped over [**Scripture Alone – Rule #1 Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas.**](#).. You may be trying to mix or blend the Bible together with a false teaching that a trusted church authority taught you.

1. Confusion occurs anytime our minds blend a delusion and reality together.

2. Confusion occurs anytime our minds blend a lie and truth together.
3. Confusion occurs when we force the bible to harmonize with a false doctrine.

Start With A Clean Slate – Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas

Next, [Study Topically – #2. Find ALL the Verses in the Bible On A Topic](#). Which is easy to do. Here on [“The Holy KJV Bible” on Google Drive](#). Simply go to any topic, and all the verses on the topic are handed to you on a “silver platter.” All without commentary.

Hebrews 8:11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

No One Understands Everything in the Bible

Relax, there are verses you read today that you might not understand for another 40 years, only after decades of prayer and study. Even experienced Bible students, in their hearts, feel they are only just now beginning to understand. The Bible is INFINITE and inspired by God Almighty, the Rock of Ages:

1 Corinthians 8:2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

Start With Verses That Are Easy To Understand

On [“The Holy KJV Bible” on Google Drive](#) download the docx, of the topic you are studying. Next scroll through the 30-40 verses on the topic. Personalize your docx, by adding **bold** or a **highlight** to the EASY VERSES, that you are able to easily understand. Do not worry or fuss over the difficult verses, simply read them and mark them with a **different color** signifying, it needs further study later on. Be patient, and allow time, and prayer and trust that God will enlighten your understanding. That may take decades of Bible study, or that may not happen until you enter the gates of the City of God. Be content with whatever the Lord has made clear to your understanding.

That doesn't mean you can't understand some things about the topic now. Do not run ahead of God, by trusting in the opinions, wisdom, and teachings of man. That will undo all the progress you gained when you determined to follow [Scripture Alone – Rule #1 Do Not Start With Preconceived Ideas](#).

The Treasury of Scriptural Knowledge

If you are still having difficulty understanding a text in the Bible, then the TSK is the next step. You will need Bible Software (like e-Sword or SwordSearcher) with **The Treasury of Scriptural Knowledge**. Go to the text you are having difficulty understanding. Then look up every verse in the TSK for that verse. **Always allow the Bible to explain itself. Period! Full stop.**

Jesus said unto him, "Follow Me"

"WHOSOEVER HEARETH THESE SAYINGS OF MINE, AND DOETH THEM, I WILL LIKEN HIM UNTO A WISE MAN, WHICH BUILT HIS HOUSE UPON A ROCK"
JESUS CHRIST



WHO DO YOU FOLLOW?

"GO YE THEREFORE, AND TEACH ALL NATIONS, BAPTIZING THEM... TEACHING THEM TO OBSERVE ALL THINGS WHATSOEVER I HAVE COMMANDED YOU"
JESUS CHRIST



"I follow
JOSEPH SMITH"

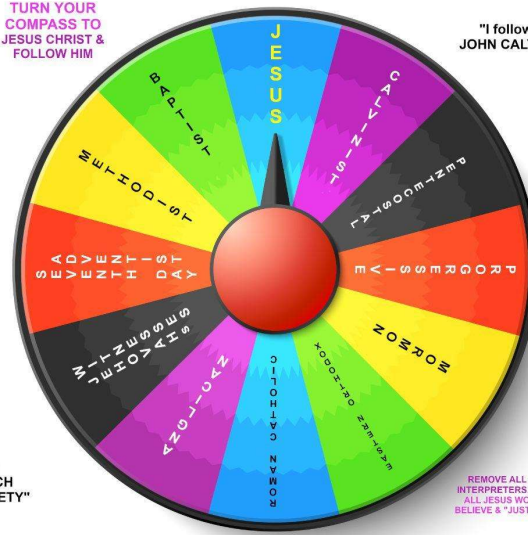


"I follow
ELLEN G. WHITE

"I follow
THE WATCH
TOWER SOCIETY"

"I follow
THE POPE"

"FOLLOW ME," "I AM THE WAY" & "I AM THE TRUTH"
JESUS CHRIST



"I follow
JOHN CALVIN"

"I follow
St. AUGUSTINE"



No

"I follow
BENNY HINN"

"I follow
KENNETH
COPELAND"

"I HAVE DECIDED TO
FOLLOW JESUS, NO
TURNING BACK!"
David Michael Curtis



"BUT BE NOT YE CALLED RABBI: FOR
ONE IS YOUR MASTER, EVEN CHRIST;
AND ALL YE ARE BRETHREN."
JESUS CHRIST

WHOSE DISCIPLE ARE YOU?

"I AM THE LIGHT OF
THE WORLD"
JESUS CHRIST



REMOVE ALL THE
INTERPRETERS, READ
ALL JESUS WORDS,
BELIEVE & "JUST DO IT"

"Be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine"
THE APOSTLE PAUL

Scripture Alone

Psalm 119:160 ¶ Thy word *is* true *from* the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments *endureth* for ever.

Psalm 12:6-7 The words of the LORD *are* pure words: *as* silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.

John 17:17 ¶ Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

Revelation 22:18-19 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and *from* the things which are written in this book.

Romans 16:17-18 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

Galatians 1:8-9 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before, so say I now again, If any *man* preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

Proverbs 30:5-6 Every word of God *is* pure: he *is* a shield unto them that put their trust in him. Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.

Psalm 119:89 ¶ LAMED. For ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven.

1 Peter 1:25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

Isaiah 40:8 The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.

1 Peter 1:23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

Psalm 19:7 ¶ The law of the LORD *is* perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD *is* sure, making wise the simple.

2 Peter 1:21 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake *as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.*

2 Timothy 3:15-16 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

Mark 7:7-8 *Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.*

Matthew 23:33 *Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?*

Matthew 15:3 But he answered and said unto them, *Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?*

Matthew 22:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, *Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.*

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

Acts 17:11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

John 14:23-24 Jesus answered and said unto him, *If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.*

1 Thessalonians 2:13 ¶ For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received *it* not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

Malachi 3:6 For I *am* the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

Hebrews 13:8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

Matthew 24:35 *Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.*

Romans 3:4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

Transubstantiation

“Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.”

Three Examples that Demonstrate Eating Miracle Bread Cannot Impart Grace or Merit to Unbelievers

1. Eating Miracle Bread at the Hand of Moses Didn't Save the Men that Ate It, Because of Unbelief.
Your Fathers Ate Manna, And Are Dead

John 6:49 **Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.**

John 6:58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as **your fathers did eat manna, and are dead**: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

Read Hebrews 3. The Hebrews died in the wilderness, *due to their unbelief.*

2. Eating Miracle Bread at the Hand of Jesus Christ & the Apostles, Didn't Save the Men that Ate It, **Because of Unbelief.**

Jesus Miraculously Fed 5000 Men John 6:1-14

John 6:26 Jesus answered them and said, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.**

These Same Men, Because of Unbelief, Walked No More With Him.

John 6:64-66 **But there are some of you that believe not.** For **Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.** And he said, **Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father. From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.**

3. Eating Bread By the Hand of Jesus Christ & the Apostles, Didn't Save Judas Iscariot, Because of Unbelief

Judas Iscariot ate bread and drank wine directly from the hand of Jesus & the Apostles at the Last Supper. This was the most holy communion ever, (Jesus and all 12 Apostles were present).

Let's Recap:

- Eating manna in the wilderness didn't save the Hebrews that were unbelievers.
- Eating the miracle bread which Jesus made to feed 5000 men didn't impart saving grace to the unbelieving men that stopped following Jesus.
- Eating bread at the Last Supper didn't impart saving grace to Judas Iscariot.

“Eating Christ’s Flesh” is to “Believe in Him”

The Key to Eating Christ’s Flesh and Drinking His Blood, is BELIEF in His REAL Flesh and REAL Blood given for the Sins of the World on the Cross ONCE, in 33 AD

John 3:14-18 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: **That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.** For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

“Believe” in John 6

John 6:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, **This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.**

John 6:30 They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, **that we may see, and believe thee?** what dost thou work?

John 6:36 But I said unto you, That **ye also have seen me, and believe not.**

John 6:47-58 Verily, verily, I say unto you, **He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.** I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world...

John 6:63-64 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life. But **there are some of you that believe not.** For Jesus knew from the beginning **who they were that believed not,** and who should betray him.

John 6:69 And **we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.**

John 19:35 And he that saw *it* bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, **that ye might believe.**

John 20:31 But **these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.**

He that Believes on Jesus Christ & Remembers His Flesh and Blood Given ONCE on the Cross in 33 AD hath everlasting life. Eating Miracle Bread does not Impart Saving Grace. For he that

eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. 1 Corinthians 11:29

For Further Study

John 6:53-54 Then Jesus said unto them, *Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.*

John 6:33-35 *For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.* Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, *I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.*

John 6:40 *And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.*

John 6:63 *It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.*

Genesis 9:4 But flesh with the life thereof, *which is* the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.

Leviticus 17:12 Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, No soul of you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger that sojourneth among you eat blood.

1 Corinthians 11:23-25 ¶ For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, *Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.* After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, *This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.*

Luke 22:19 And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, *This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.*

James 4:17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth *it* not, to him it is sin.

The Blood Thereof, Shall Ye Not (Literally) Eat

Genesis 9:4 But flesh with the life thereof, *which is* the blood thereof, shall ye not eat.

Deuteronomy 12:23 Only be sure that thou eat not the blood: for the blood *is* the life; and thou mayest not eat the life with the flesh.

Leviticus 17:11 For the life of the flesh *is* in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it *is* the blood *that* maketh an atonement for the soul.

Treasury of Merit

The life of the flesh is in the blood

Leviticus 17:11 For the life of the flesh *is* in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it *is* the blood *that* maketh an atonement for the soul.

Christ, by His blood, has obtained eternal redemption for us

Hebrews 9:11-18 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? ¶ And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth. Whereupon neither the first *testament* was dedicated without blood.

Not of works, lest any man should boast

Ephesians 2:8-9 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.

A man is not justified by the works of the law

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified

Romans 3:20-27 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law *is* the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; Even the righteousness of God *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare

his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus. Where *is* boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

All have sinned

Romans 3:23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

There is none righteous, no, not one

Romans 3:10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

Psalms 14:3 They are all gone aside, they are *all* together become filthy: *there is* none that doeth good, no, not one.

Not by works of righteousness which we have done

Titus 3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

If I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me

Job 9:20 If I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me: *if I say*, I *am* perfect, it shall also prove me perverse.

What is man, that he should be clean?

Job 15:14 What *is* man, that he should be clean? and *he which is* born of a woman, that he should be righteous?

How then can man be justified with God?

Job 25:4 How then can man be justified with God? or how can he be clean *that is* born of a woman?

In thy sight shall no man living be justified

Psalms 143:2 And enter not into judgment with thy servant: for in thy sight shall no man living be justified.

Thy works; they shall not profit thee

Isaiah 57:12 I will declare thy righteousness, and thy works; for they shall not profit thee.

He, willing to justify himself

Luke 10:27-29 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, **Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.** But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

Man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law

Romans 3:28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

His faith is counted for righteousness

Romans 4:5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

Not of works

Romans 9:11 (For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)

Not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth

Romans 9:16 So then *it is* not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

The Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness

Romans 9:30 ¶ What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.

It is no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace

Romans 11:6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if *it be* of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

A man is not justified by the works of the law

Galatians 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

If there had been a law given which could have given life

Galatians 3:16-21 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. And this I say, *that* the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. For if the inheritance *be* of the law, *it is* no more of promise: but God gave *it* to Abraham by promise. ¶ Wherefore then *serveth* the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; *and it was* ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Now a mediator is not *a mediator* of one, but God is one. *Is* the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

Not according to our works

2 Timothy 1:9 Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Venerating Saints

Peter Prohibited Worship of Himself, a Man

Acts 10:25-26 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him. But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man.

Don't Worship Fellow Servants & Brethren—Worship God

Matthew 23:8-10 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ.

Revelation 19:10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, **See *thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren*** that have the testimony of Jesus: **worship God**: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Revelation 22:8-9 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, **See *thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets***, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: **worship God**.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind

,

Paul Prohibited Worship of Himself, "Worship God"

Acts 20:28-31 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that **after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.** Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

Romans 1:25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and **worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator**, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

Acts 14:8-18 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked: The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him,

and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked. And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker. Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people. **Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:** Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness. And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

Acts 17:24-26 God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation;

Peter Is Not Exalted above Paul or Apollos

(Apollos was not an Apostle... Apollos was a "Labourer" and "Minister")

1 Corinthians 1:11-13 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that **every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided?** was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

1 Corinthians 3:5 ¶ Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

1 Corinthians 3:9 For we are labourers together with God: **ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.**

1 Corinthians 3:22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

Not for that We Have Dominion Over Your Faith

2 Corinthians 1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

We Preach Not Ourselves

2 Corinthians 4:5 For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

Peter "an Elder," not a "Lord over God's heritage"

1 Peter 5:1-6 ¶ The elders which are among you I exhort, **who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ**, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, **not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind; **Neither as being lords over God's heritage**, but being ensamples to the flock. And when the chief **Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away. ¶ Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.** Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

Those "Who Loveth to have the Preeminence Among" them

The Apostles John & Paul REBUKED

3 John 9-10 ¶ I wrote unto the church: but **Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them**, receiveth us not. Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth *them* out of the church.

2 Corinthians 11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

We also are Men of Like Passions With You

Acts 14:15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? **We also are men of like passions with you**, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

James 5:17 **Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are**, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

James, Cephas, and John, Seemed to be Pillars, "it Maketh No Matter to Me"

Galatians 2:6 But of these **who seemed to be somewhat**, (whatsoever they were, **it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:**) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me:

Galatians 2:9 And when **James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars**, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

Venerating Statues

The First Three of the Ten Commandments

I. Thou shalt have no other gods before me

Exodus 20:3 Thou shalt have no other gods before me.

II. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to any graven image

Exodus 20:4-6 Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness *of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath*, or that *is* in the water under the earth: **Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them:** for I the LORD thy God *am* a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth *generation* of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

III. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain

Exodus 20:7 Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only

Matthew 4:9-10 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, **Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.**

Keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

1 John 5:21 Little children, **keep yourselves from idols. Amen.**

Worship

MERRIAM-WEBSTER'S UNABRIDGED DICTIONARY

verb

wor·ship 'wər-shēp *also* wôr-

worshipped *also* **worshiped**; **worshipping** *also* **worshipping**

transitive verb

1 : to honor or show reverence for as a divine being or supernatural power

2 : to regard with great or extravagant respect, honor, or devotion

a celebrity *worshipped* by her fans

worshipper **noun**

or less commonly **worshiper**

1 : reverence offered a divine being or supernatural power *also* : an act of expressing such reverence

2 : a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual

3 : extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to an object of esteem *worship* of the dollar

4 chiefly British : a person of importance —used as a title for various officials (such as magistrates and some mayors)

Verb: **adore**, deify, glorify, revere, reverence, **venerate**

Noun: adulation, deification, hero worship, **idolatry**, idolization, worshipping, worshiping

Synonym for worship

REVERE, **REVERENCE**, **VENERATE**, **WORSHIP**, **ADORE** mean to honor and admire profoundly and respectfully.

REVERE stresses deference and tenderness of feeling.

a professor revered by her students

REVERENCE presupposes an intrinsic merit and inviolability in the one honored and a similar depth of feeling in the one honoring.

reverenced the academy's code of honor

VENERATE implies a holding as holy or sacrosanct because of character, association, or age.

heroes still venerated

WORSHIP implies homage usually expressed in words or ceremony.

worships their memory

ADORE implies love and stresses the notion of an individual and personal attachment.

we adored our doctor

Venerate

MERRIAM-WEBSTER'S UNABRIDGED DICTIONARY

verb

ven·er·ate ['ve-nə- ,rāt](#)

venerated; venerating
[transitive verb](#)

1 : to regard with reverential respect or with admiring deference

2 : to honor (an icon, a relic, etc.) with a ritual act of devotion

venerator

['ve-nə- ,rā-tər](#)

Did you know?

Venerate comes from the Latin root *venerārī*, which has the various meanings of "to solicit the good will of," "**to worship**," "to pay homage to," and "to hold in awe." **That root is related to [Venus](#), which, as a proper noun, is the name of the Roman goddess of love and beauty.**

Synonym for venerate

[REVERE](#), [REVERENCE](#), [VENERATE](#), [WORSHIP](#), [ADORE](#) mean to honor and admire profoundly and respectfully.

[REVERE](#) stresses deference and tenderness of feeling.

a professor revered by her students

[REVERENCE](#) presupposes an intrinsic merit and inviolability in the one honored and a similar depth of feeling in the one honoring.

reverenced the academy's code of honor

[VENERATE](#) implies a holding as holy or sacrosanct because of character, association, or age.

heroes still venerated

[WORSHIP](#) implies homage usually expressed in words or ceremony.

worships their memory

ADORE implies love and stresses the notion of an individual and personal attachment.

we adored our doctor

Idolatry

Forbidden.

Exodus 20:2-3 I *am* the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me.

CONSISTS IN

Bowing down to Images.

Exodus 20:5 Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the Fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;

Also **Deuteronomy 5:9.**

Worshiping Images.

Isaiah 44:17 And the residue thereof he maketh a god, even his graven image: he falleth down unto it, and worshippeth it, and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me; for thou Art my god.

Also **Daniel 3:5,10,15.**

Sacrificing to Images.

Psalms 106:38 And shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the Idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood.

Also **Acts 7:41.**

Venerating Statues.

By David Michael Curtis

David Michael Curtis wrote the file "Venerating Statues." It discusses the concept of venerating statues in the Roman Catholic Church and argues that it is essentially the same as worship. The document draws parallels between this practice and how statues were venerated in ancient Roman and Greek cultures. It also raises concerns about idolatry and references biblical passages against making and worshipping idols. The document concludes by stating that veneration and worship are interchangeable and questioning how the distinction between them will be assessed on Judgment Day.

Dear Friends,

Venerating statues in the Roman Catholic Church is not fundamentally different from how the Romans and Greeks venerated their statues in the ancient world. There really isn't any distinction between the two practices.

The Semantics of Veneration vs. Worship.

Many modern Roman Catholic apologists argue that they do not worship statues; instead, they venerate them. However, "venerating" and "worshipping" are synonymous; they essentially mean the same thing. Roman Catholicism carefully redefines the concept of veneration to suggest that it does not involve worship of the statue itself. Instead, the statue serves as a means for communicating with the saint being honored. In their view, when they talk to the saint, they are not worshipping the statue but rather using it to make requests and gain favor with the saint in their thoughts and imaginations.

Historical Parallels with Pagan Practices.

If we go back two or three thousand years to the practices of the ancient world, we find that the language used was strikingly similar to that used by priests in pagan temples regarding their statues. They did not believe the statue was alive or represented the actual god; instead, it functioned as a conduit for communication with the deity. This idea is illustrated in films from the 1970s and 1980s, such as "Clash of the Titans," where priests in temples would talk to statues while the god resided on Mount Olympus, listening to these conversations through the statue, which served as a sort of telephone.

The Issue of Idolatry.

Consequently, the assertion that Roman Catholicism is not idolatry fails to hold up, as it mirrors the practices of pagan priests and their beliefs about statues at every level. The Apostle John warns us to stay away from idols at the close of First John. The entire Old Testament narrates Israel's

repeated struggles with idolatry, followed by repentance and returning to the worship of the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, who commanded, "Thou shalt not make any image of anything in heaven or on earth or in the sea. Thou shalt not bow before them or worship them."

The Interchangeability of Veneration and Worship.

Venerating and worshipping are the same; they are simply two sides of the same coin. Thus, attempting to differentiate between "worship" and "veneration" is merely playing a game with words. How that distinction will be assessed on Judgment Day remains to be seen.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

He as God, Sits in the Temple of God

2 Thessalonians 2:3-4 ¶ Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come **a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.**

Daniel 7:8 I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, **behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.**

Daniel 7:23-25 Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom *are* ten kings *that* shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And **he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High**, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

Revelation 13:4-8 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who *is* like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty *and* two months. And **he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.** And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Revelation 17:3-5 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

Revelation 17:9 And here *is* the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are **seven mountains**, on which the woman sitteth.

Revelation 17:18 And the woman which thou sawest is **that great city**, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

Some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils

1 Timothy 4:1-3 ¶ Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

He cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, Come out of her, my people

Revelation 18:1-5 ¶ And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

The Mark of the Beast

By David Michael Curtis

The text discusses the "Mark of the Beast" and end-times prophecies within a Christian context. The author expresses uncertainty about the specific details of how these prophecies will unfold, emphasizing that they often differ from common interpretations.

- **Misconceptions and Interpretations:** The author challenges popular views like the pre-tribulation rapture and specific trigger events, suggesting that they are based on misinterpretations.
- **Historical Context:** The author links the Mark of the Beast to historical practices of loyalty to Caesar and the Pope, highlighting the persecution faced by early Christians who refused to comply.
- **Future Scenarios:** The author speculates about a potential trigger event involving the relocation of the Vatican to Jerusalem, leading to a global enforcement of a mark of submission to the Pope. This scenario would create a division between those who follow Christ and those who submit to the Pope.
- **Uncertainty and Warning:** The author acknowledges the uncertainty of these predictions but warns of potential persecution and the importance of choosing faith in Christ over submission to any earthly authority.

Overall, the text emphasizes the importance of remaining faithful to Christ in the face of uncertainty and potential persecution while cautioning against dogmatic interpretations of end-times prophecies.

Dear Friends,

Let's begin by clarifying a few points. Prophecy is typically understood only after it has been fulfilled. It often does not unfold in the way we expect. This is why, when Christ fulfilled his prophecies, no one realized it was happening. Each group among the Jews—the Pharisees, the Sadducees, and the Essenes—had their theories about what Christ would do upon his arrival, but each was mistaken.

Twenty-five years ago, a group known as the Prophecy Club gained popularity among Christians. Many Evangelical churches host Prophecy Seminars and invite guest speakers to discuss end-time events. As a Seventh-Day Adventist, I used to have a well-defined understanding of eschatology, including specific events like the trigger event (the Sunday Law), a little time of trouble, the latter rain, and a big time of trouble.

However, today, I am unsure of what will happen in the future. One thing I am certain of is that all these End Time views are fictional. I used to be an expert teacher on such events, but I no longer teach about them. I believe that everyone misunderstands these concepts. End-time events will unfold in unexpected ways.

Many expect a pre-tribulation rapture, hoping to escape the impending tribulation. Jesus referred to people like this in a parable, noting that when persecution arises, they become offended and fall away. For two thousand years, the church has faced persecution, and millions have been martyred. In the end, things will not be different. Naturally, people would prefer to hear that they will be saved from such a fate; it's an appealing message. However, Jesus warned that if He faced hatred and persecution, so would His followers.

The two views, Futurism, and Preterism, are the two main theories among Evangelicals. Jesuit priests invented them at the Council of Trent to counter the Reformation. Futurism is what the fictional novel and movie series "Left Behind" are based on. Preterism teaches that all prophecy was fulfilled by 70 AD by the destruction of Jerusalem.

We don't have enough time this morning to discuss the Seventh-day Adventists' (SDA) beliefs regarding end-time events. However, I want to clarify that their views are based on a misinterpretation of the Mark of the Beast. Traditionally, the Mark of the Beast has been understood as submission to the individual sitting on the throne in Rome.

Each year, early Christians were required to appear before a magistrate and pledge their loyalty to Caesar. All they had to do was declare that Caesar was a god and offer a pinch of salt. After doing this, they would receive a one-year license to buy and sell, which allowed them to continue conducting business for another year.

Later, under the Papacy, this practice continued for many centuries, but instead of Caesar, all of Europe had to submit to the Pope. Failing to swear allegiance to the Pope meant that your household could not buy or sell. This is a well-known part of history. Many who confessed "Jesus is Lord" not only faced the inability to buy or sell but were also martyred.

I am hesitant to share my thoughts at this moment, but I would like to discuss a few theories regarding end-time events. I believe that the events described in Matthew 24, Luke 17, and Luke 21 occur twice. The first occurrence took place in 70 AD with the destruction of Jerusalem. The basis for my belief that these events will be fulfilled a second time lies in the three "abominations" spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, which are found in chapters 8, 9, and 12 of the Book of Daniel. The events in chapters 8 and 9 have been completely fulfilled, while the one mentioned in chapter 12 is still a future event. This future event will occur during a time when the saints who have passed away will be raised and will shine like lightning.

What is the trigger event? No, it is not a Sunday law. It is mentioned in Daniel 11:46 when the Antichrist establishes his palace in Jerusalem "in the midst of the seas." Let me clarify what I believe this event refers to: I think that due to the ongoing war and turmoil in Israel, the Papacy will

propose relocating the Vatican to Jerusalem, promising peace and safety to end the conflict. I believe this will happen in the near future. This is the trigger event I am looking for that will initiate the fulfillment of Matthew 24 for a second time. I could be wrong; time will tell.

Imagine a world where the Vatican in Jerusalem is center stage, much like how COVID-19 rapidly changed everything and brought about unimaginable events. Imagine all the world wondering after the "beast." In this world, the mark of the beast is enforced. Everyone must submit to the Pope, preventing anyone from buying or selling unless they accept this mark. If such events occur, this will divide us between those who confess "Jesus is Lord" and those who submit to the Pope.

Can you imagine a testing period lasting 1,260 days during which governments revoke the right to buy and sell and even execute those who refuse to submit to the Pope? No one can remain neutral; everyone must choose a side: Christ or the Pope. All Christianity will either see the obvious truth that the Pope is an Antichrist or will receive the mark, like Esau, for some food. I could be mistaken; only time will tell.

It is too early now to tell exactly what will happen, but if anything resembling this does happen, may God help us.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis